

HARRY RANSOM
HUMANITIES RESEARCH CENTER
The University of Texas at Austin

NOTICE: WARNING CONCERNING COPYRIGHT RESTRICTIONS

The copyright law of the United States (Title 17, United States Code) governs the making of photocopies or other reproductions of copyrighted materials.

Under certain conditions specified in the law, libraries and archives are authorized to furnish a photocopy or other reproduction. One of these specified conditions is that the photocopy or reproduction is not to be "used for any purpose other than private study, scholarship or research." If a user makes a request for, or later uses, a photocopy or reproduction for purposes in excess of "fair use," that user may be liable for copyright infringement.

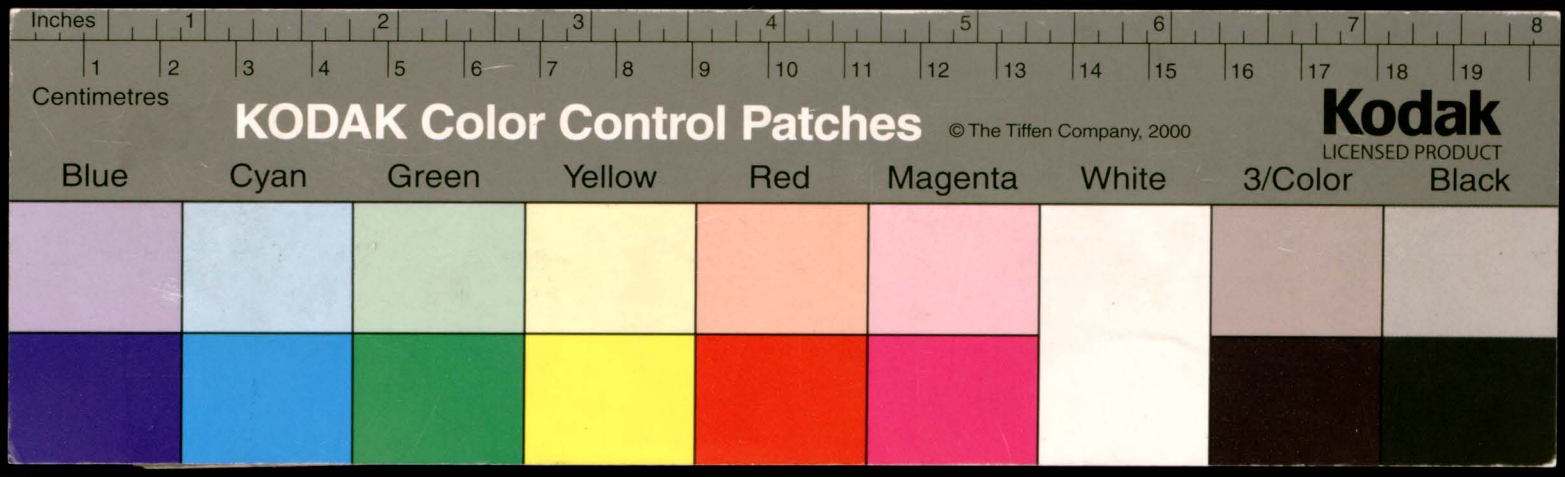
This institution reserves the right to refuse to accept a copying order if, in its judgment, fulfillment of the order would involve violation of copyright law.

****

This digital reproduction for research purposes was produced by the Harry Ransom Humanities Research Center, The University of Texas at Austin, PO Box 7219, Austin, Texas 78713 Web site: www.hrc.utexas.edu. Researchers are advised that material still in copyright may not be quoted from or published (beyond what is allowed by the Fair Use provisions of the U.S. Copyright Law) without written permission of the copyright owner.

Reproductions of manuscripts or other original materials may not be deposited in another institution without the written permission of the Ransom Center. Further reproduction in any medium of these images is prohibited, with the exception of paper copies made for research use.

- 7/05


Inches
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
Centimetres
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

BRETHERTON,
LIGAVIT,
1847.

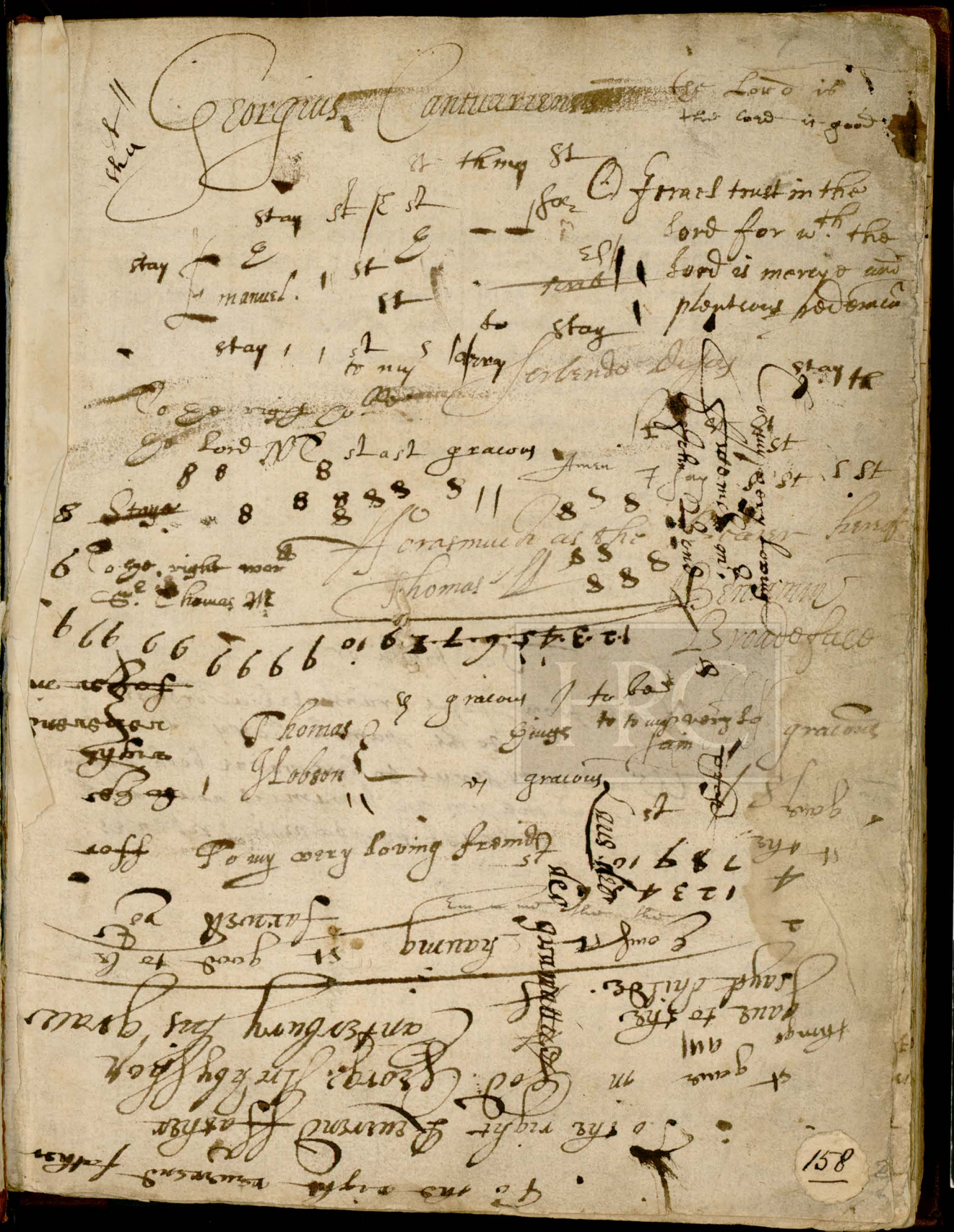
12341*
Ph a 57.1229.
625 F2

Purchased Aug 30. 1849

Cat 158

Virginia
p 63

HRC



BRETHERT
LIGAVI
1847.

Vox populi or

Newes from Spayne translated accordinge
to the spanish Copy
Which may serue to forewarne both Englan
and the united Prouinces howe farre
to truste to Spanish pretenses

Vox populi

Newes from Spayne translated according to the Spanish coppye.

His catholique Maiestye had giuen commandement that presently vppon ye returne of Signior Gondomar his Leiger Embassador from England (1618) a speriall meetinge of all ye principall estates of Spayne (whoe were of his counsell) together wth ye presidents of ye counsell of Castile of Arragon of Italye & Portugall, of ye Indies, of ye treasure of warre and especially of the holy inquisition, should bee held at Mounson in Arragon the Duke of Lerma beinge appointed president who should make declaration of his mats pleasure, take account of ye embassadors seruice and consulte touchinge ye state and religion respectiuely to giue satisfaction to his holynesse Nuntio, who was desired to make one in this assembly concerning ouertures of peace and amitye wth the English and other Catholique heretiks which might ingender suspition and iealousye betwixt ye Pope and his Maiestye if ye Mistery were not vnfolded and ye ground of those counsels discouered aforehand.

This made al men expect ye Embassadors returne with a kinde of longinge vt they might behold ye issue of this meetinge and see what good for ye Catholique cause ye embassadors imployment had effected in England answerable to ye generall opinion conceiued of his wisedome, and what further ioint would bee sett on foote for to become matter of publique discourses. At length he arriued and had present notice giuen him from his Maiestye that before he came to Court hee should giue vp his account to this assemblye: which comand he gladlye receiued as an earnest of his acceptable seruice, and gaue thankes that for his honour he might publish himselfe in so Iudicious a presence. He came first vppon ye day appointed to ye counsell chamber: not long

after

BRETT
LIG
18

asse the counsell of state (except ye Secretaryes) and the Presidents mett then wanted only the Duke of Lerma, and the Popes Nuntio whoe weare head and chefe of all ye assembly those two stayed longe away for diuerse respects. The Nuntio that he might expresse the greatnesse of his M^t and lose the sea of Rome not respect by his ouersight: but the heretiq might be full at his approach to obserue him. The Duke of Lerma to expresse the authority and place off his M^r exacts more seruice off his fellow seruants then ye M^r himselfe. Those 2. stayd till all the reste were weary of waytinge & but at length the Nuntio supposinge all ye Counsell sett) rauished forth and came to roade in the counsell Chamber (w^ch weare (as the mutuall distance of duty from the company and blessinge vppon it from him) he sate downe in solemne silence greeuinge at his ouersight. when hee saw ye Duke of Lerma absent w^th whome hee strouue as a Competitor, for pompe and glorye. The Duke had sent be fore and vnderstood of the Nuntios being there and stayed some thinge longer yt his boldnesse might be obserued, whom in hee had his desire, for ye Nuntio takinge a wilde patrently cryuen away the time w^th seuerall complements to seuerall ye sent had now almost runne his Courtship out off breathe. But ye Duke of Villa hermosa president of the counsell of Arragon fed his humor by ye discharge of his owne discontentment vppon the occasion of ye Duke of Lerma his absence and beckned Signor Gundamor to him beinge this speech in ye hearing of ye Nuntio after a sportinge manner. How vnhappy are ye people w^ch haue you haue been first for there soules being heretiques 2. for there estates: w^ch ye Name of a fauorit is so familiar. Loue happy is our state where the keys of life and death are portasily rome by (poyntinge at ye Nuntio) hanginge at euery religious girdle, and when ye K. Dom: of Justice, and Mercie stand equally open to all men, without respect of persons. The Embassadoe knew this Ironicall

stroke to —

to bee intended as aby blow at y^e Nuncio but fully at the Duke of Lerma (whose grce at yat time began now to wane & heavy towards declina-
tion) and therefore hee returned this answer: Your Excellency
knowes y^e state is happy where wise favorits governe Kinges, if the
King & themselves bee foolish, or where wise kings are, whose sabiego
favorits whether wise or foolish, will not yet bee governed by them.
The state of England (howsoeuer you heare of it heare in Spaine or
Rome) is to happie my last finde: they meed not much care what
the favorits bee (though for the most part hee bee such as presents
all suspition in that kinde, being rather reputed as a scholler to be taught
and trayned up then as a tutor to teach) of this they are sure no Prince
exceeds them in personall abilyties: so that nothing could bee
added to him in my wish but this one that hee were our vassal and
a Catholique: with that the next without more notice
of the Duke of Lerma his entrance at whose first approach
y^e whole house arose though some later then others as every
one iudged plummets on them to keepe them downe, the
Nuncio only sate vnmoued The Duke cherished y^e observance
of the rest not a familiar kinde of carriage to high for
our estate, as one not neglecting their demeanors but
expecting, and aske a signall obeysance to y^e Pope his Nuncio
sate downe as president vnder the cloth of state but somewhat
lowder: then after a speare time for admiration preparation
and attention hee began to speake in this manner.

The Kinges my Mr. Commyt it more honorable to doe then desire to
to take from yo^u the declaration of ordinary vsed matters in schools
and in Pulpits then in Counsell: Hath appointed me President
in this holy wise learned and noble assembly: A man naturally
of a slowe speech: and not desirous to quicken it by art or industry
as hoping ar hon onely vnto a Spaniarde as I am by
birth, to a Soldier as I am by profession a King as I am by represen-
tation, take this preface for y^e declaration both of the cause of this
meeting and my Mrs. his further pleasure.

BRETE
LIGA
18

shore Eath been in all times from the worldes foundation one
Relig commaundor or Monarch vppon y earth; this needs no
further proofe then a Catholoking into our owne memorys
and Historyes of the world wherin is there now any questio
(except with infidells and Heretiques) of y one supreme Com
ander in Spirituals, my vnitye of whose person y rulers
of y visible Church are included. But there is some doubt
of y chief Commander in Temporalls (whose Cat[holi]c[k] man to yt Sum
might gouerne by night as this by day, and by y sword of Justi
compell to rome in or rult of such as infringe the
authority of the Relig: This hath been so well vnderstood
longe sithe by y infallible Oracle that thirby vppon de
clination of y Rom and Emperours and increase of Romes spi
rituall splendor (whose thought it vnnaturall that there
sunne should be subiunary to) our nation was by y Bishop
of Rome solicited before other peoples to conquer and subd
y nation with a rodde of Iron, and our Kings to yt title ad
ourned with y name of Catholique Kinge as a name abou
all Names vnder the sunne (with.) vnder God wherin gene
rall himselfe y catholique Bishop of Souls. To instan
this point by Comparison to the first vppon the grande Ig
norance y vocab Turke whoe take a large title but not prou[d]
for besides y he is an infidell his Command is confined wi
his owne territoryes and he stiled not Emperour of the wor
but of y Turkes and their vassalls only: Amongst Christian
the defender of y fayth was a glorious title, whilest th
Kinge to whome it was giuen by his Colinesse continued
worthie of it but soe stood not in the iudge neither yet
those y succeed him and besides it was no vocab Kinge w
obserue Christian ought to be defender of y fayth, no more
then to be stiled wth France y most Christian Kinge whereon
soe farre y greatest Part of his title remain wth most
Christians.

the Empire of Russia, Rome, Germany, extend not to the limits further
then their seates hath ever bene called ye Mr. of most Catholique Kings
is for dominion of the Sea as ye Antients call it Bishop for dominion of soules
over all the earth with wch we reckon Interim except wee
the English entitle ourselves Soveraigne and the greatest part of Europe with
some part of Asia and Affrica by actuall possession and over all the right
by indubitable right yet actuall possession acknowledgeth this right
to be derived from the free and fatherly donation of his Holynesse
whose as the same writers Monarchs Later by reflection to this King
come to this King to the King of Kings My Mr. what hee can the late
Gowdooe or others Lord may keepe and hold that hee may get
from any other King or commander by any Stratagem of warre,
or profession of peace he may take. for this cheife only by usurpa-
tion except this Lord of Em from whome all ribill power
is described as colaterall from his Holinesse What ye Ignorant
the treason if it bee in ye Pope is truth and what they call truth
if it be against Em it treason and put all our peace our
warre our treaties of marriage or what other intendment
of ours elsewhere at this principall ende to get the whole
possession of the world and to reduce all to banish under one
Emperor all principall heard that our King may be weake what hee
is called the Catholique and Universall King as Eagles therefore
vnderstand and the Church universall mystically vnder one
head the Pope whose seate is and must necessarily bee at Rome
where ye Pope late for must all men be subiect to our and their
Catholique King whose otherwise seate is stated in Spaine his tri-
bunall every where: this point of state or rather of religion wee ge
the Rom: Catholiques religion taught us very wheare and almost
made wth all sorts of people by intelligence or by
way of confession My Mr. is able to penetrate the secrets of
every person to withdraw their subiects allegeance as if they were
from princes raise my Mrs. subiects in truth their Lords whome their
birth hath taught to misake for their amynes. and for them some
(and in England especially where they learne at once to obey the
Church of Rome as their Mother to acknowledge the Catholique King
as their Father

BRETHREN
LIGA
184

And to take there owne ease in the obligac[i]on and surgery
for wee see religion and ye state cold coupled together and
Lawe and order flourish and spread and participate of there
fortune as prosperinge upon one stocke of policye it speake
this the more because his p[ro]fession [illegible] wee are partakers
of one with the rest. Neyther restraynes wee this freedome
of speech from the Nuntio his presence because he sub[mi]t
is a Spaniarde by birth God is also adjunct by profession an
order ruled by the prudence of gods Spirit to accomplish
this Monarchy the better all of them comyng appropriat pu[n]
it and ab publique degrees and giftes counsells to this end
discerne the wisdome of this state is to be esteemed we admire
not yt as in Temporall warre it employes or at least trus
none but ye Spanishe Natives in Castile Portugall or Arragon
in Spirituall it employes none but ye Spanish, and for employ
them saith they are generally reputed whom [illegible] for
has from so howmuch farther obliged to others still to be ours and th
to owe of the Spanish fashion though they bee Colonians Engl
French and [illegible] in those Countryes and Courts. The
intents therefore and all wch some they alwe and rests on the
Spirituall traffique must needs be sought and for our Catholique
[illegible] Kings must needs have an infinite Kingdome
& an unknowne Nu[m]ber of Subiects in all Dominions w
will serve them selves and their faythe by their works of
beleeve as Scripture wee shall [illegible] to be their Salu
to all worlds. This p[ro]posit being ye generall end of all our
clusions according to those two directions of late proue [illegible] Phil
to his Some three robustuous advance the Catholique Roma
Religion ye Catholique Spanish Dominion together
by his Matis. Com[m]and to take account of yse Interior Gondamo
whose sale com[m]n Embassade for England to see what ye Lord offer
there /

there towards the advancement of that purpose and what further is
prepared shall be settled not to this ende. Then the Embassadour
(whose allowed care handled at this time) with a more obeysance became
them. This most laudable custome of our kings in bringing all
offences to such an account where by they may be taught of good or
bad the truth upon the determination of those Lectures and employments
resembles those Roman Games appointed for the Soldiers
and as in them it provoked to courage so in the it strikes terror to duly
genius. Our Mr. considereth by his agents with all the world, yet with
none of more regarde then the English, where matters of such like
sythes as often presented through the several humors of the State and
those of our religion and factions that no instrument can be
sufficient for such Negotiations but such must be left in trust to
the discretion judgement and diligence of the Incumbent. I speake
not this for mine owne glorie I abhorre to be so praysed and therefore
do desire me only but to forewarne of the double dealing of
that there may be more prest allowed them to deale in as occasion
shall require. Briefly this rule delivered by his Excellency is
was the Cande and Compasse by wch I sayled to make profitt of all
humors and by all meanes to advance the state of the Romish Church
the Spanish faction together upon all advantages thereof either or the
breach of them. For this is an old rooted hatred and treachery done unto
the Romish religion he did not only give us the better word but
blessed in the tongues of the men. And therefore to our
serious deliberations shall be the Consideration of the old and the effect and how
as his Excellency in his excellent discourse ment to defend our
outward forces and greatest aime ought against the Catholiques
and rebells no them in true amity with keepe off the Romish
allegiance. This I affirme yt there can be no security but
by such means though now Romish disobedience may stand more
requisite for my aimes have been to make profitt of all
and to make my Mr Mr of all wch is a faithfull and constant
sonne of his Mother Rome. And to this end I behold the endeavors
of our Kings of Lately removed how they have attended
Kingdomes and conquests by this policie rather then by open hostility
like and yt without differ since as well from your allies and
the faithfull men of the same Roll given and professed
such

~~And to sate them and keep them at a distance and by such~~
such as were those of Naples, France and Malta, ~~&~~ (though I doe not mention Portugall now united to us, nor Siboy yt hardly stept from us as of the adverse and hetrodoxall faith. Notice is this Build cast off. as ye Great Kingdome of France ye state of Venice ye Low countreys Boheme (now all Labormye for Life under our plots) apparently many ot. This was therefore I bent my Engine in England as ye Monde shall shortlier be heare. Notice shall I need to reherse a Catalogue of all ye Leaders I have done ~~&~~ ~~&~~ ~~&~~

2 for the Estate left by [illegible] so large a portion — to Heretiques they should match and enable them to wasters and impouerish and weaken the Catholiques.

To the direction of Popes Nuntio answered of his holynesse for Catholique causes would dispense with the Marriage though it were a further or more nere degree of many sortes perhaps of all. 2 for it was not hazarde since women especially younglones are so obstinate in there opinions that they are able to worke Solomon to their opinions then Solomon to worke them to his fayth. 3 it was a greate advantage to match with such from whome they might breake at pleasure, hauing the Catholique cause for a colour besides if need were to be at liberty in all respects. since there was not fayth to be kept with Heretiques and if holynesse may dispense with the Murtherer of sire and disposse of their crowns (as what good Catholique doubts but hee may) much more may her and will her in there marriages to prevent the leprous seed of heresie and to settle Catholique blood in the chayre of state.

To the second obiection Embassador then also answered saying that though the English generally loathed the match and would as hee thought buy it of them with halfe of the estates hauing the Nation of Spayne and there religion as appeared by an oprobrie and assault a day or 2 before his departure from London who seemed greed of such an occasion to bent there owne spleens in doing of him or any of his a mischeife yet sorts of people unmeasurably desyred the Match might proceed. 2 the beggerie Courtiers that they might haue to furnish there wants. 2 the Romish Catholiques who hoped hereby at last for a moderation of fynes and lawes penall a tolleration & happes a totall restauration of their religion in England. In wch regard the Ambassador shewed zealous ioy at the hope that there frendes

Inches Centimetres KODAK Color Control Patches © The Tiffen Company, 2000 Blue Cyan Green Yellow Red Magenta White 3/Color Black Kodak LICENSED PRODUCT

and hulfe there estates could procure the sorrow of ye Ladies (if
there came to be marryed to their Farmers) they would freely
use ye meanes faithfully to fight under her Colours when
they might doe it safely: and if it came to portion they would
under hand contribute largely of there estates to ye Spanish
Collector and make up ye portion out of them selfs & happ
more, for by this it might bee wrought yt the state should rath
be rob and weakened with is our dayes then strengthened w
the English vainly hope, besides in a small tyme they
should worke so farr into the body of the state by buyn
offices and the like whether by sea or land at sill or exchequ
call in Church or state (all boinge for Mony expos
to sale) yt with the helpe of ye Jesuites they would ex
termine them wth meere with (without gunpowder) and
leave yr kinge but a few subjects whose fayths hee might
relye upon. whilst they were of a fayth adverse to his
for what Catholique bodie yt is sounde at the heart can
abide a Concept and hereto all hands! with yt ye Duke
Medina Celi & Feria president of the counsell of warre p
one of the Counsell of state rose upp, and sayd his Excellen
had felt the force and witt of the English m. dd. & m
hee had cause to doubt ye Catholiques themselves y
were not fully Jesuited upon any forren invasion
would rather take part with there owne Kinge (tho
an heretique) then with his Catholique Majestye a
stranger.

The Embassador desired him to bee of a better minde saye
Sir for ye Scots generally were bodies by longe
disuse of Armes were disabled and there minds effe
minated by peace and Luxurie farr from yt they
were in dd. when they were slight in our bloods
made hardy by customary conquests. and for the
affections of those whome they call Recusants

have been imputed to ye Puritans of greatest spirits of ye Calvinian sort: so ye oppressions wch lands by ye proceedings of this parliament howsoever they were intended by Roman Catholiques land by them intended to disturb ye present yet were they propounded in favour of ye puritans as if they had been hammered in there forge wth very name and shadow of a Question ye kings harkening being a sufficient aspersion to disgrace any person to say here is sack and a sufficient cause to crosse any suite and utterly to stop it to say it smells of ye mutinies of ye time. Moreover there are soe many about ye king blowe this coale betweene there own stakes if a parliament should inquire there actions ye they use all there art and industry to withstand such a Counsell knowinge ye if once he might absolutelye rule by this prerogative without a parliament and thus furnish him selfe by marryinge without and by other domesticke priuates without subsidies when beatinge of subsidies and taxes have been the only ye princes have made of such assemblyes. And whereas some few minds among them, doe combine our Nobilitie whose priuiledge of subpœna ye statute forreen imbasinge, call for ye course of ye Roman Law, ye Law most opposite to ye Nature of those other kyngs seruers cry the lawes downe and cry up the prerogative, whereby they prey upon ye Subiect by fines and exactions, make ye estate, and keepe it poore, procure them selfe suspicion among ye better and most iudicious sort and hate among ye oppressed Commonalty. And yet if there should be a parliament such a course is taken that they shall neuer chuse there owne knights and burgesses freely, whose make ye greatest calfe of ye body there for those being to be elected by most voyces of freeholders in ye country when such elections are to be made, are carryed wth way ye greate ones wch have Land in those Countryes. pleade wher by there letters com and there tenants followers and frends to nominate such as adhere to them,

and for the most part are of our factions and resport there owne
benefit or ymagen rather then there countreyes good, yea y^e countrey
people them selues will obserue one, stand for there greate master
there Lord or neighbour or M^r. without regard of the Comon tye,
wisedome or reason. y^t with they ayme at as I am assured by seuer
full intelligence is to please there Landlords and so renue the
leases. In wch regard they will betray there country and re
belyon too and elect any man y^t may most profitt there p^r
culer.

Therefore it is unlikely there should ouer bee a Parliament emp^r
ble y^e Kings debts should be payd, his wants sufficiently supp
red and himselfe left full guarded by such a course and mo
as it is generally thought by any other course but by a mar
riage with us. For wch cause whatsoeuer Iesuit where liste
to attempt entres safely at y^t dore whilst there followers lies a
sleepe and will not see the danger. I haue made triall of
these Seculars and found few exceptions in this ge
nerall rule.

Hereby I and there owne wants to my Lord haue kept them
from furnishing there Navy with Coming the wealth of
there Island and once y^e strongest in Christendome
lies now at roade vnarmed and fitt for ruyne. If
euer nee doubted there strength by sea now wee
neede not, there are but few shippes or men able to
looke abroad or to lurch in a storme much lesse in a
fight. Thus I offended by boarding them in Cad
y^e furnishing of a navy and suffered in my
and so would abort his Minde from this Matter the
hope whereof rather then they would loose, they would
lose almost there hope in heauen.

2 All there voyages to y^e East Indies I permitt rath
with a colorable resistance then a serious. Be
cause I see them not helpfull to the state my
nerall carrying out golde and siluer bringing
home Spice silke feathers and y^e like toy Ey

and insensibly wastinge ye common stocke of coyne and bullion
whilst it fills ye customs howse and some privat purses wch
thereby are inabled to keepe this discommodity on foot by bribes
especially so many greate psons Cosen states men being
venturers and sharers in ye same besides this wastfull spoyle
marchandize not one of 10 returneth. which I am glad
to spare for they are the men wch stand in parr of.

3. as for those most Indian voyages I withstand them
in earnest because they beginne to inhabite
and fortifie there and may in time happily cause
an other England there to withstand our new Spayne
in America as this old England opposeth our present
state and clouds ye glorious extent thereof in Europe
besides they trade for some commodityes wch
our west of their treasure and often returne gold
for timber glasses or the like trifles, and yt
without such losse of their marchandize as in
other places. Therefore I rose wt all adventurers
intendments were directed for Virginia or
Bermudas, because I see they may hereafter be
really helpefull unto them as now they serve for
drayns to unloade their populous state, wch else
would overflowe its owne banks by continuance of
peace and turne head upon it selfe to make a body
fitt for any rebellion. And so farr I prevailed herein
as I caused most of ye recusants who were
chargers to withdraw their adventures. To effect
wch nothinge was donne by ye publique purse ye
we know by experience such voyages and plan
tations are not effected without greate meanes to sustayne
greate difficultyes and with an unwearied resolution
how to meete all casualtyes and disasters wth strong
helps and continuall supplyes or else the undertakinge
proves idle.

42 By this meanes I kept ye voluntary forces from dismissing till it was almost late to sett out and had a hope yt that worke of secrecy should have broken forth to action before those could have arrived to succour them.

43 I sett hard for ye cautionary townes w^th our late Queene Elizabeth of happy Memory soe aymed at as rountinge them ye keyes of ye Low countreyes that they might be delivered to his Catholique Majestye as to ye other Monarch. And had happily effected it but ye great enemy to our state and Religion wch did forbid after saw Counsell to restore them to ye rebellious states as one yt knew that popular Comon wealthes to be better neighbours unto Princes and lesse dangerous enemyes then Monarchyes and soe by practise to wrested them from my hands and furnished ye Exchequer from thence for yt tyme wherfor was I much grieved at ye breach ye dependancy they had upon ye Crowne of ye English seemed now to be cutt off. And yet ye English had in them and thereby cause to be taken away wch must be fully and finally effected, before we can hope either to conquer them or England, we must be fully and finally effected, before we can hope either to conquer them or England, whose holdinge are too stronge for ye world at sea and therefore must be disunited before they can be overcome. This point of state is acknowledged by our most experienced pentioner Mr Bacon whose former plots to this end, shall be a witnes for the depth of his Judgment.

44 But ye last before I did for ye State was not ye least I under wrought that admirable enginer Raleigh soe was ye cause yt his coverdy threatninge murder and damage to ye world was observed crowned and him selfe returninge in disgrace & pursued almost to death, notwithstanding I saved & kept almost all ye things sett right & all strongs

gold. But the determination of my commission would not per-
mitt me longer to stay, to follow him to destruction, w^ch I desired
the rather. yt by confession I might have warning from him,
confederat Englishe, an acknowledgment of my Mrs. right in
these places, punishinge him for attempting there, being the
most prescribed for the first foote. And this did to stoppe her
& moulde hereafter and because I would quench the valour and
heate of yt Nation yt non should dare hereafter to undertake
the like, or to be soe hardie as to Looke out at Sea or
breake topper our roaste. And lastly because it would bringe
to an ignominious death yond pirate, who is one of the last
now leuinge braue vnder the deceased Englishe Dragon, and
by her flesht in our blood and ruine. To doe this I had many agen
th, first dudged conscience, who were hungry and haped wide
for Spanish gold, secondly some yt bare him at harte for
inueterate quarels, thirdly some forreyners, who hadinge in
vaine sought y^e like hitherto hopes to finde it in his death.
fourthly all most of the Comish saythe were one of the Spa-
nish faction, and would haue bin my bloodhounds to hunt him, or
any such to death willingly as seinge hatringe y^e prosperitie of
there Countrye, and y^e valour worthy and witt of there owne
Nation in respect of vs and o^r Catholique Cause.

Lastly I left behinde such an instrument, composed artificially
of a secular vnderstandinge and a religious profession, as hee is
every way adapted to serue him selfe into y^e closet of the best
and to worke vppon the feminine Complexe, where in y^t coun-
try haue masculine spirits to command and pursue there
plots euen vnto death. This thorough I account as done, and
however in it knowinge it will bee very profitable vnto
vs gratefull to our faction there and for the rest what
though it bee crosse to the Clergy or people. Wee
only negoti-
ate for o^r owne gaine, and breake about the marriages for our
owne ends can conclude or breake of when wee see our owne time
without respect of such as command this or that vs, nor hurt vs.

for

for I haue certayne knowledge yt ye commons generally are soe effe-
minate and cowardly as that they at there musters (wch are seldome
and slight only for ye benefitt of those Muster Mrs.) of a thou-
sand souldiers scarse an hundred can discharge a Musket, and of y
hundred scarse one vse it as a souldier and for yore armes they are
for ye most probabilitie, that one Corselet serveth many men, in-
such as shew theire armes vpon one day in one place, lend them to
there friends in other places to show when they haue bin. And yt
if it doe spide is only punished by a Mullct in y purse wch is y e
officers gayne who for his advantage winks at y e fact and is glad
to finde and therby by conniuency profitable faults wth menace
his retenue. Thus stands ye state of that poore miserable
country wth Lead neere more people and fewer men. soe
y t if my Mr. should resolue vpon an invasion the tyme neuer fitts
for as now scarcitie of this marriage and y e disuse of armes ha-
uinge cast them into a dead sleepe a stronge and wakeninge fac-
tion being euer amongst them ready to assist vs, and they
being vnprouided of ships and armes and hearts to fight a vniuersall
discontentment fillinge all mens. This I haue from there
Muster Mrs and captaynes who are many of them of our reli-
gion or of none and for ours ready to bee bought and sold, and desirous
to bee my Mrs seruant in fee.
Thus much for y e state particularlie wherein I haue bent my skill to
weaken them and strengthen vs, and is all those I haue aduanced
y e Catholique cause. but especially procuringe fauours fall all such as fa-
uour that side and crossinge y e other by all meanes. And thus I
practise my skille and giue out generally to bee practised by others,
that whatsoeuer successe I giue out I finde, I will boaste of ye
victory, wch I doe to discouraged y e Heretiques to make them
suspicious one of another especially of there prince and best states
men and to keepe our owne in Courage who by this marriage of
ours, would bee in danger to bee ouerthrowne.

Now for colledging and such designes as fetch there pretence from thence
I hold it policy of y e late Bishop of this (Canterbury) whose stu-
dy it maintained a dangerous schisme betweene y e secular priests and

and Jesuites by w^ch they discouered our weaknesse, to the dishonor of
the clergy and prudence of our cause. This taught me (about
Barmbeck in the Low Countreyes) to worke secretlie and insomuch
that betwixt those conformists and non conformists, and
to cast an eye ab fare ab y^e Dutches: knowinge that
business might be stirred vp there that might hinder open
dmyes in England, as the Queene could hold the Scots
to raise some the forces of England, and soe to prohibit
their conquest. The effect whereof came to this some in
the daies of Argile, whose sonne since was baptized for
the Queene, and fought against the great Marquis Hunt,
boy and man fighting vnder our banners at Bruxells:
beareinge the crosse of St George and St Andrew for y^e staffe
of St James. Neither doe these hopes and labor but were dayly expect
more preachers at least sent a disunion as will neuer admitt
solid reconcilement: but will send some to vs and some to Am
sterdam: for the kinge (a wyse and vigilant prince) labouringe for
a different peace betwixt both the kingdomes wch we said cannot
be effected where the bare ceremony in religion is continued
there will sharpe bitter brauls from thence arise wch will stir
some tribunes for honour more then truthe preferre there
owne man before the generall good of the Queene and
edification of soules.

7 The makes (I say) a iourny into Scotland but wch was such vnsuccesse as her
exported for diuersse of ours attended y^e traine whose stirred vp hu,
mours and factions and cast in scruples and doubts to hinder y^e progresse
y^e proceedinges, yea those y^t came must adverse vs and auerse
from vs and our opinions by their disobedience and example helpe
forward our plots, and those are incouraged by factions and
many multitude, by a fayntie and irresolute clergy (many false brethren
there being amongst those Bishops) and by y^e prodigall Nobi
who wch maintayned those stirres in the Queene y^t thereby they
may safely keepe their Queene-liuings in their hands wch

Kodak Color Control Patches © The Tiffen Company, 2000 KODAK LICENSED PRODUCT Blue Cyan Green Yellow Red Magenta White 3/Color Black Inches Centimetres

wch they have most sacrilegiously seized upon in the first deformacon and wch they feare would bee recovered by the Clergy if they could bee brought to brotherly peace and agreement. for they have seene the Kinge verie bountifull in the ffirst Parliam[en]t lately mr[e]called three pentions and farthd three Clergy a competent mainteyne and besides out of his owne meanes wch in that kingdome is mone of the greatest brought in and restored wch the Bpps rights to the Church wch were before in Layemens hands a greate part of the Nobilities estate consistinge of Spirituall Lands with makeinge them affrishe the Puritanicall faction wch will bee contented to be trounced for wch straps and rewards and contributions and arbitrary benevolences from those lords and lairds and ladyes and adherents and followers.

But qd the inquisitor Generall Sow if this act of the Kinge should so farr offend (as wch see is so earnest and constant) as it should effect a perfect Comon, wch in the Discourse and Comonwealth he would it would in my conceit bee as great blow to us, if by a Generall meetinge, a Generall peace should bee concluded and all their forces sent against the Kinge and wch see the politique Kinge aymes at this.

Frier (Quidamor) but see take the marke amiss howsoeuer wee understand the people and there inclination better then any man and better knowe how to temper their affections. for besides that see is hindered there in Scotland under hand by some for the reasons afore recited, and by other greater of such wch are in great place and authorite amongst them see is likewise deluded in this point even by his owne clergy at home in England wch see pretend to bee most forward in the cause. ffor they considering that if a Generall Reformation were wrought that a inundation would follow whilst all or most of their Clergy (as they feare) would flock thither for preferment as mens passinge towards the Sunne for light and heate so the Romane Church should bee prepossessed ffor.

Thus

Thes therefore I say howsoeuer they boare the Kinge ferely in hand
are vnder hand against it and stand stiffe for all ceremonyes
wch a kinde of Nouelties to bee obtruded vppon them wch they
obiect with too almost dreames to terrifie any when if any
abatement were made doubtlesse they might bee drawne
6 more in wth ease, But there is no hope of this
with them respect neyther parte deals seriously but onely for the
present to satisfie y^e Kinge; and soe there is no feare of ours sid
t affections and opinions soe diuerse will ever bee reconciled
and made one. The Bishop of St Andrews stands alone almost
gapes and pulls vppon him for the y^e Labour y^e hate and y^e envy of all
with litle efficiency whilst the adverse partie haue as sure friends
and as goode freinds about the Kinge as her hath, and y^e same post
happs y^t brings a packett of letters from y^e Kinge to him brings ano
ther from their letters to them acquaintinge them with the whole p
readinges, and counsells and preparinge them before hand for
oppositon. This I know for trouth, and this I reioyce in as
conduceinge much to y^e Catholiques good. But q^d y Nuntio
are there none of these forehead preachers busie about this
Matter! mee thinks there fingers should itch to bee scratchinge and
there tongues burne to bee speakinge condemninge this busi
nesse officially y^e Puritan cutt short, howsoeuer y^e most tem
perate and indifferent sauery them selues.

The trouth is my lord (q^d the Embassador) that priuately what
they doe and publickly what they dare bole in England and
Scotland, al for the most p^t (except some y^t beer of our fayth)
oppose y^e Matie to there vtmost by prayers Complots speeches
Vowes but if any bee found longer tongued then his fellowes wee
haue still meanes to charme there forwardnes to silence them
and expell them the Court to disgrace and crosse there prefer
ments with the imputation of pragmaticke Puritanisme
for instance I will relate this one particular. A

Abr. of theires and a chaplain m Ordinary to ye kinge, gaue manye
reasons m a letter to ye kinge against ye marriage and pro-
pounded a way how to supplye ye kinge wants otherwise
wch I understand not for wrought vnder hand, by wch Dr.
was comitted and hardly escaped the danger of his presumptuous
admonition, though the state knew his intent was honest, and
his reasons goode. Whereon was on the other side (both
here and with the Arch Duke) hand had bookes printed,
and pictures printed ouer the againste the kinge & state,
forthwith three Embassadors haue sought satisfaction
of vs in vayne, not beinge able to stay the printer so much
as to touch the hem of ye Authors garment. But we
haue an euasion with Hortiques miser, our clergy being
free from ye temporall sword, and not included m ye
treatyes and conditions of peace but at liberty to giue any
Heretiall printe y Mate when they list, whereas they are
liable to account and hazard, and are mustred for barkinge,
respondt may go the darke and bite too. The Councell table
and starrchamber dot terrifie them, as they dare
not but rume at the strength m excellent demeanor
and come in at the least watche. They rail here pre-
chinge m many places standinge vp but they crouche
and dare not stand vp nor quest. but begg and lyck soles,
like sellers silent and creepinge vpon their bellyes and
licke vp dust with our Priests take off from theire
beautifull feet.

Now ye Duke of Lerma) sathe we about our owne
Clergye how they stand. for they were petitions made
to ye kinge, in ye Name of distressed afflicted pro-
secuted and imprisoned priests, that his Mate would
intercede for them to free them from the intolerable burthen
they groaned vnder to procure them Liberty and

and Letters were directed from vs to that end, that you should my dilate this demand wth all speed and diligence.

Most exth Lorde (replyed Gundamor) I did your comand wth a kinde of Commaundo my selfe, not thinke more it fitt to make it a suyt in your name or my Mrs I obteyned upon Liberlye to walke freely up and downe to fare and outfare there accusers, Iudges, Magistrats Byshops and to exercise their functions altogether as freely almost as safely as at Rome.

Here the Nuntio obiected that hee did not well in his iudgemt in procuringe there liberlye since they might doe more good in prison, then abroad, because in prison they seemed to bee under persecution and so were pitied of others and pitty of the Lorde & pardo of offention further. Besides upon they were carefull ouer there owne lives to geue no offence. But abroad they might bee scandalous in theire lives, as they vse to bee in Rome and Spaine and other Catholique Countreyes, and soe the opinion of there holynesse wch vpholds there credit and raise vp against the married Clergy would soone decay.

But the Embassador replyed that he conforted those reasons mentioned. But beside a superior comaund hee saw the fitt of their liberlye more then of their restraynt. for now they might freely conferre and write practiqued and would doubtlesse procure some worke of wonder. And besides by reason of there authority and meanes to change places did apply them selues to many persons where as in prison they could only deale wth such as came to bee caught and were there prest before. And this (for hee

Kodak Color Control Patches © The Tiffen Company, 2000 KODAK LICENSED PRODUCT 3/Color Blue Cyan Green Yellow Red Magenta White Black Inches Centimetres

If I adde a Secretary as before they were maintayned by private contributions to devoute poore Catholiques then to devote so much more shall they now be able to raise treable Summes to weaken the Estate and furnish them for some higher attempt. Vid the Example of Cardinal Wolsey barrelling up gold for Rome; and this they may pretend for since all Catholiques rob the Exchequer of Recusants and make Gold bricks from them by fraud, or force to give to the Pope of whom they ought to receive it by apostolic due. And if this be found it is an easie to lay all upon the Hollander, and say his carryes the coyne out of the Land whose are forwarde enough indeed to such practises and so ours shall not only be confused but a flaw made betwixt them to weaken their amityes, and beget suspicion betwixt them of each others Love.

But among all those priests the Inquisitor generall did you not remember, the old reverend father Baldwine your good finger in that dismall attempt made of our behalf against the Parliament house such as for serving your highly venturing their lives for so Catholique cause are not to be forgotten, but rewarded and cherished, thereby to encourage others to like holy undertakings.

Holy father the Guardian my principall care was of him whose life and liberty when I had not without difficulty obtayned of the King I solemnly went in person attended with all my trayne and diverse of the watermen to fetch him out of the house where he was in Durance. As soon as I came in my sight I bent my head my selfe low and humble at our accustomed knee and to kisse the reverence worthy and to ask Ghostly fatherly. And this I did to confound them, and to put downe contemptuous clergye and so beget an extraordinary opinion of holynesse in the people and give more boldnesse to the Catholiques by their open obedience whereby as many hyms flew Jesuits whose authority was somewhat weakened since the schisme betweene them and the secular and the forementioned powder plott) why worthy Father I did as all their servants. And if they may be this no more boldly or securely I have formerly at dayes

daught the authoritie of their high comission, upon wch reason the
there wth diverse pursevants attendinge men of ye worst
kinde of condition, reddie bente & fleet and familiarlie attendinge
upon the inquisition. Whose office and employment
is, to disturbe the Catholique search their house for trusty
holy documents, books, beades, crucifixes and ye like holy
utensiles appertayninge, I leave to ye discretion of their office to be blackened and so left open why
may be given to our spirituall instruments for a free
exercise of their faculties. And yet in their purse
vaunt had ye greatest authoritie a small bribe in the
countrie would blinde their eyes or a like greate
at court in ye exchequer chamber and roose all their
proceedinges, so that malicious ment of late spirits, made
a greate crashe to fright children and men, how we cared
but feare not ye men of Catholique spirits. And this
is the effect of all other dangers of proceedinges in the
end, in all their inordinall courtes, where knowne Catho
liques convicted by all their laws often summoned and
fined, threatened and bound over, but the danger
is past, as soone as their office hath the fee payd to him.
Then ye execution ceaseth. Pray upon my conscience
they are glad, when they are offended in that kinde
because they are bountifull and the offered to the
best to labour them that they may intertaine, and so
their goodnes and gaines comes in freely. And if
they should see fit to prison them in ye place for the most
it is made a sanctuary to them, as ye olde Romans were
wont to stuff up such by way of restreint as they
meant to preserve from ye peoples furie, so they have fast
in prison till new time to worke their liberties
and after their lives end in ye meane time ye place of
restraint is a study to them, where they have opportunitie
to conferr as in a colledge together, and to arme themselves
in writing against the single enemye abroad.

But of the the inquisitor yonwalk how dor they
for bookes when they haue occasion to write
or dispute.

My Lord replyes Gardam we all the Librarys
belonging to the Romish Catholiques
through the Land are at there commaund
from whence they haue all such collections
as they can require gathered to there
hands as well from the Libraries of both Vniuersitys and
the Bookes from Colls if it be requisite.
Besydes I haue made it a perticuler part
of my employment to buy all the Manu-
scripts and other auncient and rare
peices out of the hands of the Heretiques
so that there is no greate scholler dies my
Lord but my agents are dealings in sich bookes.
Insomuch that when there learned Master Cauſa-
bons Library was in question not one booke in
his owne hand not there diligent Inquisitor
forsooke all dangers and hath his eye busyed
in every place presented my plat for
after the death of my greate scholler I sent
to require a note and catalogue of all his
Bookes &c.

wch Lord prare in londinge not to goe out
bidden by any man if money would hold them.
Wherunto (besides ye damage yt sho would send
ye by ye losse of ten shillinge the same
was by ye Lord Cardinall Baronius procured
from Rome against Erasmus notes,
yet Sanders made good advantage of his Notes,
& rather wth his slaunderous censurable Criticismes
for ye more parte, and framed and putt out
of ye same vnder his name at his will and pleasure.
But his forsaid Prometheus was sent
Iourney of ours, ye Bysshop of Winchester
to search and seek ye Papers and Books bpp
ye study, wch a very short time made allow
vnto him to ye Court of Canterbury Ao
1610 wth a bountifull pension for ye pro-
vision of hise and his. but this plot failinge at
that time hath not obtayned soe much had ye
Bodleian Library of Oxford to be inriched wth
many manuscripts taken by that fearefull Knight
Sr Thomas Bodley, if he had been then Imployed,
or that cause thought vpon. for I would labor
what I might this way or another way to
disarme them and that to frustrate ye
best authors either, or at least to draw them out
of ye hands of Romish Catholiques. who are
already. 26. And to this end an offeriall eye

would bee had to ye Library of or Sr Robert Cotton An
Ingresse of antiquities yt whensoeuer it come to bee
broken vp eyther before his death or after the most
choyse and singular peice might bee gleaned and
gathered vp by ye Catholique Church.

Nor after all any man thinke that I stand vpon
too petty Circumstances & punctualls / an embassadour
of small charge & the end was aymed at since w
obserue meaulayne confusion of seuerall Lawes and Ages
is no more profitable & ordinarie for States
men then among Stallers and there Book of
especially when the Lyes for whome we wak
ye Lyes of Stallers and Cant to Lead al
most altogether in there element. Besides
if by any meanes we can continue differences
in their church or make them wider, and beget
distast betwixt there Clergy and common Law
yers, whoe are men of greatest power in
ye Land ye benefit will be ours ye Consequence
great opening the way for vs to come in
heereafter for perfect all quarrells, produce ar
all questions.

As his was further prosecuting this discourse
one of the Secretaryes, whose name to South
Comber desired entrance and being admitted deliu
ed letters which he had receiued from a Post fr
ye President and ye rest of the Counsell fro
his Catholique Matie the contents whereof
were the first effect. Right

Right trusty and welbeloued cou[n]sell[or] we greet yo[u] well. Wherras we had a hope by our agents in England and Germany to effect that great worke of the Protestant Empire and Aduowse on the other side to surprise L. Vienne and so inuironing Europe and infolding it in our armes make y[e] easie roade vpon the Turky Nation, and at last reduce all the world to our Catholique Comand. And whereas to these holy ends we had secrett and sure plotts and prouiso[n] on foote in all these places and good intelligence in all Courtes.

Know now yt we haue receiued late news of the apprehension of our most trusty and welbeloued Barnevelt, and of y[e] discouery of other our intended mates soe yt o[u]r hops are for the present adiourned till some other conuenient and auspicious time. Wee therefore will you [illegible] vpon sight hereof to breake of your consultations and repaire forth with to our presence there to receiue further direction and proceede as y[e] Necessitie of time and cause shall require.

With that his Excellency and the whole house stroke wth amazement, rose[t] there foreheads rose vp in sad silence and brake vp there speedily abrupt lye and without farriance tooke horse and posted to Court from whence expect we with the next fayre wynde.

Fin

In the meane time let not these bee vnwelcome it concerns to bee vnder stood knowinge that this aspiringe Nabuchadnezzar will not loose the glory of his greate[st]nesse vnles continuall [illegible] to magnifie Him self in his great Babel till it bee spoken

Thy Kingdome is departed from thee.

IRC

Vox Spiritꝰ.
or
Sr Walter Rawleighes ghoste.

Appearing in conference betweene Seignior Gundamor his Maty Embassadore of Spayne; the frier confessor, and father Baldwine the Iesuit at Ely howse in Holborne.

Reuerent fathers seeing all circumstances giue way to our last proposed conference, and byssines, and that the secrecy of place wth conuenyency of time take hand in hand as it were to set vs downe in the chaire of confidence and good successe let vs remember our selues, as instruments of the Kings honor & Spaynes glory. let vs remember the projects in hand to be of noe lesse weight then that burthen wch presseth Atlas and Hercules. let vs remember the end to registre our renowne in the court of fame, and expose vs to our posterity for worthy patriockes. for if there were no more but our selues striuing to propagate the Catholiq Religion it were a meritorious worke, and a key to open the doores of heauen: but being nowe a peece hammered on the Anuill of policy and nationall wisdome, incident onto vs aboue other people, it might well procure admiration. And worke happinesse in the confidence of good deserunings. for my part therefore I will not spare that freedome, wch maketh honor and glory proude aboue to swell vp highe in the hearts of her creatures, though the silent night and our presumption of secrecy should be affrighted wth the feare of discouerie, or the lauishnes of wanton tongues. /

Frier
My lord you say well, you haue made my blood warme with incouragement.

Baldwine
The seruices wch you haue donne (my lord) to our Mar and

Kodak Color Control Patches © The Tiffen Company, 2000 LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue Cyan Green Yellow Red Magenta White 3/Color Black
Centimetres Inches

BRE
LI

32

Vox Spiritg

like so many oares to drive you forward to the hauen of all happines, for as a boat paſsing the channell of good ſucceſſe and is carryed to the port of ſecurity by a ſtrong ayde, and good guiding, ſo haue your affayres thriued wᵗʰ a cautelous &hon=our and worthy endeauour: but now if in the ſtraight haue mouth ſplitt vppon a rock and find more danger in yᵒʳ ad=mittance home, then in yᵒʳ indurance abroad hine illæ lachryma=

I am English by education birth and yᵒʳ by education an= goods by the ſatisfaction of my conſcience, therfore one ſhall not caſt a miſt in yᵉ others eyes, but they ſhall ſee the right way. you haue (I confeſſe) treated wᵗʰ the King= Maᵗʸ of England about ſerious affayres, you haue plaid him wᵗʰ ſecret diuiſes, & you haue (as you conceyt) cullid him in ſecurity wᵗʰ formall proteſtations, you haue peraduentu= played Hippomenes wᵗʰ Atalanta, who flung apples in her wa to coſen her of her ſwiftnes, ſo it may be a kind of ap= parition of Treaſures hath made him believe, yᵗ he may h= way ſupply his wants. you haue played the Siren wᵗ the younge Prince as if you meant to bring before him not the contemplation of one Diety, but of 3 goddeſſes in= ſo that if he lye not himſelfe faſt to the maſt of Religion and Chriſtiã policy he may be circumuented. you haue wan= =ted ſome Nobles to go into the temple of Remon and not to= diſparaged, or polluted. you haue tempered wᵗʰ ſome Bps. t= moderate that high comiſſion againſt Catholiqs, and ſtaid the purſeuant from to narrow ſearches. you haue baſted a wonderfull intertainment amongſt the gentry of the kingdom graciouſneſſe wᵗʰ yᵉ Ladies: you haue delighted your ſelfe of wᵗʰ confluence of people to yᵒʳ priuate Maſſes, and that out inhibition, or reſtraints, you haue ſtaied their iurney their navies, or ſetting out of any fleet, (but for yᵒʳ own purpoſe, and not to ſaue thᵉ of trouble) but out of obſer= to deliuer princes from one anothers iellouſies in harkning

after forreigne p̄parations, you have smiled at thos-
Mustrers, as if they were fitter for may games then any
solid expedition, you have stopped the publiq voice of defa-
=mation, and kept in their hate, wth in their bowells to inflame
them the more, but alas, what saies Tacitꝰ of such pro-
=clamations, that a state gayneth litle therby, but that they
wch of thē selues would have reported nothing but truth
(being thus forbidd̄) take notice of lesse thē there is and
giue out more then they knowe. ? ? ? ? ? ? ? ? ? ? ? ? X
You have p̄uented the narrow searches of the wise fudges
by bringing an old eminent head to the block and now a (or
new vpstart aduersary wth in the compasse of a proclamat-
you have cast a bone between 2 doggs in the East that why
they snarle one at another, and eat on an others flesh, a
third vppon aduantage shall take that from thē, in a word
what have you not done according to the post propter fidā
taciturnitatē, wch defeacts not the charactor of a faithfull
seruant, and the wisdome of a counseller, and Embassador
and yet you see for all this there is a parliament p̄roclaim-
in England. A parliament after yor confidence that the (ed
King did vtterly dislike, and abandon the nether howse,
and they againe reprined against the vppr for in a manor
doing nothing wch was by his Maty proposed. A parliament after
a strange discouery of ill affection of many nobles to-
=wards inferiors, and dangerous stomachings of that prowde,
and great Citty London wch is thus enlarged to his owne
renowne, and the admiration of all nations. in a word a
parliament against all expectation cannot chuse but bring home
=mes one the shoulders of his holinesse, and shuffle vpp
some iealousie in the Catholiq king. /

Fuer

I thinke not so, Spayne is confident of his selfe against a
worlde, but if that were otherwise, what can a parliament
effect to oꝛ p̄iudice, or others exultation.

Kodak Color Control Patches © The Tiffen Company, 2000 LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue Cyan Green Yellow Red Magenta White 3/Color Black
Inches Centimetres

Vox Spiritus
Baldwino.

I must now go free, my experience hath a little transcended your observations, you have only like the doggos of Nilus snatched and lapt[y] waters in the running. I have w[th]out fears bathed myself in the streames and knowne their fords, and their channells, and their stoppings: A parliament in England can do any thing to the knitting of the kingdomes glory: a parliament in England cā be so exalent over the blessings, and welfare of the country, that it shall be kept close from the griping armes of Cæsar, w[ch] would also usurpe the plenty of the nation, or else the subiects vnto many slauish inconveniences. a parliament in England can keep the Ma[ty] of kings in their fairo moving orbes, that they looke w[th] sweet aspects vppon their subiects, yeelding a splendor and gratious lustre all ouer the kingdome.

A parliament in England can call great officers in question whose iniustice spreades abroad like stinking fumes, p[r]judicall to all the sweet flowers and greene grasses round about in their owne existence vnsauory, and noysome. A parliament in England can debase a potent strang[r], from fitting their to a Diadem, tho' they are not lineally descended, as was apparent in King Philip, who married to Queene Mary, yet could not obtaine that prerogative to be crowned king of England, a parliament in England keeps forreiners from griping to hard the offices of the Common wealth and very seldome shall you see them at the helme of authority.

A parliament in England can suppresse all p[r]judicall Monopolies w[ch] (like Prometheus vultures) grow vppō the heart of the people, who murmure at the pride and lasciuousnes of high looking men, mayntained out of their sweats, watchings and tedious indeuors.

A parliament in England can call home the shipps in the Indies and tell the world, that was but a conseming trick of state to deale w[th] such greiate factores for the enriching of certaine persons, who w[th] Midas can wish euery they touch should be ted into gold, though w[th] Midas they are readie to starue to

want of good Sustinance. — indeed when wthout exportation of treasure, losse of shipping, extraordinary expences of provision, decay of men, and many other inconveniences, dependig on those tedious iourneyes, and dangerous places, (I might say) vnholsome peoples) the leuant shall be filled wth glorious navies, and the fame merchandize brought vs in at as small rates, wth greate assurance, then shall Spayne her selfe behold the glory of yt nation when so many goodly shipps muster wthin their owne straights, then shall their princes of Italy wonder at their potency, and the pope be terrified, that Rome shall be sett on fire indeed. then shall the Turke retreate not pfuming to make further incursions into Europe. for feare he loose that beautifull city Constantinople, wch was once Europs glory then shall no scorne be put vppon the Mats of greate Britanne, as the king of Achans demanding of Captaine Best, whether the King of England or Holland were the mightyest prince. then shall Barbary and Morania confesse the Exaltation of the mightiest, and come in an hundred wayes vnlooked for, then shall pirats cease, and tumultuous spirits be taught a lesson of homely and safer indeauors / A parliament in England can humble the subiect vnto the King, for proclaiming his son in law King of Bohemia, that his well willers may be induced to more profusnesse of contribution wher as they are now amazed and know not what character to afford him, nor how to bestow their benevolence, sidering his Mty is resolued to keep correspondence wth the howse of Austria, as for those hard beginnings on his part I haue heard some of their owne ffrestike maintaine that the works of god, haue euer had such troublesome and poore beginnings like a graine of mustard seed, yet haue had successfull progressions: the smallest haue concurred wth prosperity, to the admiration of the world. / A parliament in England ca restraine ye subiects fro giuing or redeeming, forreine contribution, especially to or fro their

neere oppostes, how euer the men flock to our Priests on their Knees, and their Ladies hang about our neckes to conuert them. / A parliament in England cā open their laps, and bid his maiesty take out treasures by handfulls, and by cartfulls, and by houseffulls, nay what will they not giue (as I haue heard some of them say) to procure this ytended marriage wth Spayne, and direct both king and Princes to some other aspect, wch shall looke more pleasant on the subiect, and make thē more alacrious thē thus to be tyed to those they inordinatly hate. /.

Frier.

But alas where is this wealth; from whence shall come this wealth treasure to answare theise occasions, or assist him, like a prince to wade out of the myre of debt, and pouerty?

Baldwine

O be not deceiued: experience goes beyond opinion or outward shewes, England is rich. the subiects generally excell other nations this this hath wrought all the disturbance of Europe, this hath gadded the harts of his holines, and made Rome bleed inwardly for their dissention, and this hath caused our priest to hunt in euery corner, to conuert them from their dissembled chastity (wch I must needs confesse) what weake and ragged soules not worth a crust in other countries haue bin welcome in England to the pleasant cakes and plentifull banquetts of ho: persons. O the happinesse of England, the plenty of England, the pleasures of England, the abundance of England, what cathedralls, and famous structures of still hold vpp their heads, that Europe cannot parallell, such monasteries, vniuersities, such reuenewes, such opulent maintenance such altercloth in those dayes, such pictures, such pictures, such chappells, such magnificence, such musig such Organs, such ornaments as shall neuer be seene agayne, such palaces for nobles and such villages, such townes, such gentlemens howses, such attendance, such stemes, such decorum, that the world must not compare wth the kings many howses and diuersity of furniture, such bravery of the court, beauty of the Ladies, cost of the gentles, and pride of their rich inhabitance why this

peasant hath a hansome dwelling and plenty of fair sweet linnē
and good welcome, the Mechanicks sit not downe w^th out drinking
of syluer, and the meanest artificer goeth w^th money to the shed-
:dells, w^ch erooded the worlds wonder, this caused that Booke of w^ch
was called the conuertion of England / to be written, this cost
4 00 ℔ for our iurney to know in whose hands the Abby Lands
were, and how they were transporred to collaterall vses. This
cost 2000 ℔ for the search of their harbours, and hauens &
as much to know, who were well affected to o^r Religion and
proiects. I dare say no more, but let the prince please
the subiects, though that may be accounted an humiliation /
yet that is a glorious affability / and they will not only
giue him their wealth, but their very eies out of their
heads, I confesse that was a braue motion to conquere
England, and 2 Alexandrian works, if that had an Alexā-
drian successe. yet you see that is of greater consequence
then to vnty a Gordian knott, or to obtaine a Darian victory
may beleiue that the Diadem of Brittane hangs not so loose
as the Mydary of Persia, and for all that sty of Mahumet-
:ans the Turks Turban will sooner tumble vnder foote the
the crowne of England loose her splendor or lustre, for
/except heauen determines some strange thing for their pride
and heresy / the starres will fight for them, as they did
against Cycera, the Angells will defend the^m as they came
against the hoast of Zenacherib, the earth open for their
sakes, as it did swallow Coarah, Dathan, and Abiram, the
very seas swell against their aduersaries, as once they
did praile against the Aegyptians. /
All this while was Gundamor silent, whether as intentiue
to that was spoken, or fearing some assertion should light
vppon him for his former presumptions, and assumed security
in Spayne, that he had charmed the king against a parlia-
:ment or flattered himselfe by certaine adulterate collections.
that he was confident of the successe. But on a sudden (as if
the hand writing 2a in the wall should knocke Balthazars knees

Vox Spiritg.

together) a straunge apparition affrighted the all, A ghost a
fearfull ougly ghost (yet were the circumstances more fearfull
then the substances) for although he came in a gentle manner
yet Gundamor cried guilty and was tormented as if he had
felt a punishment indeed, Besides, by the oration he made
he left the more astonished then the oughlie affrighted
the with, but what shall I dwell on deuises? / he thus acts
his part.

Rawleighs

I could begin with the poet, crescis amor pecuis fatetis
sanguine, crescet vindicta, but sit you downe and be quiet I
will neither distempor yor conformes nor disturb you from
your designes, and yet I am Rawleigh for whose destruc-
-tion, (I may call that lenity) this great Matie of great
Britaine hath kept a mirth with the Gundamor, and thou hast
made Spayne beleeue that he did it meerly for the loue of his
kinge, my tongue is past speakinge with eyeing the dislike of deuo
sourraignity, and my heart hath neither blood nor passion
nay, sit you still I say, be not dismayed, thou didst but thy
duty, and if I had bin employed by any king in the same
kind, I should haue done the like by thee, I come for no
such purpose, as reuenging, nor meane to startle in the
solutions, for I haue the hand of you all and can reson-
-ble yors to the adder it puts his taile to his eare, and will
not heare the voice of the charmer, nay I thinke you
haue heard, (though you dare not read it) the story of Pha-
-raoh. who though he saw the hand of gods mercy and
preuidence in the peoples deliuerance, and of his iudgement in
his owne disturbance, yet would not let the people goe, but
like a refractory delinquent persisted in his wickednesse &
wilfulnesse, goe on therfore in the course yee precipitate to
more irreconcilable miseries, then that cursed did at the
gaping cane, for though I should aduise you by the sages,
making you coniecture, that the dead know more then the liuing
yet you, wch will not beleeue the scriptures, will not beli-
-eue though raised from the dead. Once agayne (I say) be
-quiet, leaue yor thumpings, yor, yor dashings, yor crossings, yor

conformings, yᵉ mumblings, and all yᵉ apish trikes, for
I must, and and will tell you my message, though to no-
other purpose then to give my country cause of laughter-
and reioicing, when they shall see all yor deuises frust-
-rated, and yᵉ dissembled policies annihilated, for in plaine
tearmes, the Popes direction, the Emperours resolution, yᵉ
Mastᵉʳˢ confession, the Inquisitions charge, the Iesuits de-
=uises, and all yᵉ former attendance - consists in these 5.
things.

1 the propagation of Catholiq Religion.
2 the exaltation of yᵉ Popes Supremacy.
3 the glorification of the Spanish Monarchy.
4 the extemation of the low countries greatnes.
5ᵗʰ the abusing of the Englands simplicity.

Of all wᶜʰ as briefly and as orderly as I can according
to the time of my limitation.

Propagation of Catholiq Religion - - -

First then concerning religion, continue as yᵉ haue begun-
& I warrant you, yee will do well anough, keep the people
ignorant, cast a mist of superstition afore their eyes make
them believe, yᵗ a prew of gold bestowed vppon an indul-
gence, shall release thᵉʳ a pœna et culpa, let thᵉʳ know
noe more then yee are willing to teach them, proclaime
it a point of heresy to read the scriptures / and of pᵉ=
=sumption, to do as the men of Berea did to search the
scriptures, whether those things were so, wᶜʰ the Apostles
alleadged and no question, this policy will send more
soules to the diuell, thᵉʳ their owne sins will procure. /
I will put you in remembrance of some delicate passages
whereby this cause hath so well thriued. after that Steph.ⁿ
Gardiner had raged in many bloody executions against yᵉ
Saits of God, he was terrified wᵗʰ an hasty summons of
death, wᶜʰ was but pᵉparation to a further iudgment yet
desperate in his villany, he would dy the Popes Champion
leauing this caution behind him yᵗ if such a gapp were open
as the acknowledging the of the merits of Christ to be only

the satisfaction for sins, the Apostolicall Hyerarchy would soond fall asunder, and so no hope of inlarging the pontifficall glory. marke but the psecutions of the Primitive Church, you will confesse the bloody and cruell, yet sanguis Martyrum was semen Ecclesiæ. Julian the Apostate came to play his part, he tooke an other course he debarred the entercourse of Christians, shut up their Scooles, prohibiting their preaching, and interdicted their solemne assemblies this proued to be more advantagious to the Diuell then all his tortures and vexation of soules. you had once a tricke when princes were at leasure to examine y^e enormities of yo^r lives, and abuses of yo^r cloisters, either to raise particular quarrels out of the Circle of disturbance against other kings, as you did by H. 5. who resolued to trace ouer you in his fathers steps, by setting one foote a bill w^ch was psferred against you, in the 2^d yeare of H.4. But to diuert him, you send him into France & the B.p. of winchest. lent him 200 00 tu to incite him recouer the holy land. as you did also R.3. Ed.1. H.4. when yet you knowe God hath curssed the same and charged the stones neuer to admitt of any temples moster againe. by the deuices and many more, you put on Esaus hairy necke, and rough hands to deceaue (Isaac) and so for the time, went away w^th the blessing, and thus dealt you, with Christendome, in the propagation of yo^r religion till at last yo^r hypocrisy, and impiety was discouered and what did you then when you saw things did not consent wth yo^r policies, and unhallowed practicks, you mistaked the running betwixt 2 shoales, w^ch loosing ground in one place gets it an- others, and so you wherried ouer into America, where the saying of o^r saviour was verified in you, y^t by going sea & by the sea, and by land to make a proselyte you caused him to be ten times worse the child of the Diuell then he was before.

Nay in England and remote countries you haue playd the Empirike w^th mens soules, as they do w^th mens bodyes, when the

find the^m could, and phlegmaticke, they make their waters
stronger and stronger, till at last their is none efficacios
but of greate violence and operation. /
Indeed thus at the first you begamo w^th poore and ignorat
priests then w^th doting superstitious friers, next you had
sophisticated learning from Sorbonistes, and scolemen, last
of all you endew^th politiq^s and deuoute Iesuits, confoun-
ding the simplicity of men, and women, w^th distractions
of charactors, and exaltations of titles, committing yet
this error, this strange and grosse error, and y^t w^th
a deuouring greue yet ever, giue, giue, perswading others
to perfection of poverty, when yet yo^r selues are vn-
satiable, couetous, Erasmus hath a saying, Roma omnia
vendit. and you haue an insectum that in England as well
as in other countries offices are sould for money. but
where amongst you all the enormities of worldlings did
you euer find that y^e grace of gods spirit, and saluatio^n
could be bought for riches. Nay yet know rather
y^t Simon Magus was reprehended for offering the Apostles
money, and yet this was, ye hope to propagate yo^r Relig-
gion, O yee fooles, why go yee not into Turkey, Persia,
and amongst the Mahometans, and Iewes w^th this doctrine
why do yee not attempte their conuersio^n. Tho they
cannot abide ymages, they hate Idolatrie, contest against
prophanation, obserue the Sabaths and such like w^ch
you cannot endure, but put of yo^r trumperies w^th the
ordinance of the church, the vowe of authority, and suste-
nance of good orders, when yet their is not one word to
maintayne the same out of the scriptures, but go on go
on, till the blind leading the blinde both fall into the
ditche, and you haue one tricke more, especially when
you deale w^th vnderstanding men, and the setled gouer-
ment of England, the feare of diminution of yo^r authority
make you cautelous, and politiq^s, where by serue vp your
admiration to the highest, perswadinge yo^r cleargy, that

the puritans would suppresse their ambition, abate their pompe, and take away their wealth, and give away the liuinges to the kinge, In noting y^e puritans to be factious against gouernment I meane the States, as it now stands vnder colour of defention of the word, and that Religion cannot endure ceremonies, but god being a spirit must be worshipped in spirit, w^th out outward formality, and cooling the protestants w^th indifferent courses, and moderations of life, when yet you knowing that to be neither hotte nor cold will not be endured in a spirituall

Nay Spare neither neither kinge nor counsell, Lord nor Lady, gentle nor yeaman, but tell them all conscience is a coward, and to make but a shew of vaine Religion meanes the brand of a foole, or madman, for gouernment must be maintained rather w^th policy. thus Shall you p^rsue against heauenly wisedome, and Sata^n will be glad to haue such firebrands to set the world in combustion.

2. The exaltation of the popes supremacy.

Secondly concerninge y^e exaltation of popery, this is the way to raise vp bildinge as highe as heauen, and exalt you w^th the tower of Babell though it be w^th confusion, this hath led you many yeares to y^e maintaining of forreine and all this while p^rsumption dareth ackowledge the pope a god one earth, he will make you beleiue you shall be aduanced as Saints in heauen./

But why came you to infect England w^th this contagion confid^ringe you haue had experience of annihilating those trumpaces. this flowrishing tree hath ben blasted since amonge vs, and the temporall lawes of the Realme haue condemned many yeares agoe, the popes authority nor could the traiterous ambitious intrusions of Gregory or Hilebrand against Edward the [illegible] 4. and the first Emperour or other popes against Fredericke 1. and 2 [illegible] of Bauaria, and fewe of the rest either terrified vs or preuailed, but wee haue runne vpon this wall w^th forcible mine and our engines of battery, y^e records of England are apparant [illegible] Kinge and their Barrons haue ben sensible of such pertinacious impiety.

The name of a pmunire hath in ancyent times vnited
yo^r proctors, and punished yo^r pdats. leave of therefore
youre foolery in England, and medle no further wth your
beades and crucifixes wth wch peraduentur you may play wth
the Ladies or ignorant people, and willfull wome as mid-
dkes do wth nut shells, picke out y^e kernell, and make a noyse
wth the broken peeces, and paduenture yee may detaine
some lords wth dispensations, and wanton pardons for sinns
who will yet be neuer induced to indure yo^r sup may
considering that as vlcers, and boiles breake out of a corrupt
body, so many treasons of murther, intrusions vppon grieues, encou-
radgments wthout voyce, interdicting one another, and such
like procured from this dunghill, wch against like lithe
festring soares shall make his holines loathsome to be
looked vppon and you his agents like so many leopards
fit for nothing but a Lazerhouse. may marke amongst
yo^r selues what a straine of faining ambition is raysd
by this meanes, The Popes nuntio must sit
aboue all princes embassadors and such a coile of obser-
uance, and ceremonies is vsed, t' y^e the Embassage is sooner
dispatched, and answared the' the Nuntio settled in his place
the roomes must stinke wth perfumes, the ground spraded wth
carpitts, the gard giues their attendance and the Noble
men tortured wth expectation of a man that hath neither
witt, learning, nor birth comelines, honesty, nor good manners
but only a title of the Pops Nuntio. so that by reason of
this affecting name of vniuersall B.p. all the princes of the
world must be disesteemed, and their Embassadours dis-
=graced, yea most comonly the Busines of Europe by such
Popish meanes, is either nightily neclected, or not at all
brought into fashion.

3. The glorification of the Spanish Monarchie.

Thirdly concerning the Spanish monarchy, who must be a
catholik vniuersall king (as well as his holines an vniuersall
Pope) I remember indeed, I have seene the portraiture of
Europe made like an Empresse whose head was Spayne, crowned
with an Imperiall crowne diadem, the neeke the pirene moun-
taines, as it it were wth great knockes like the women of a

Vox spiritus.

Helueria, the Breast France and Sauoies, the longs and skirts downe to her feet Germany and Graecia betweene her armes the 2 seas, the Brittish, and the Adriatick. the right hand and arme was stately holding upp Sicilia in a mounde. the left arme was couered with a mantle, but a land appeared vnder the hand of Brittaine, which because (as that frenzie) she was not able to grasp for the vastnes, as the other hand did Sicilia, they made her to play with it vnder water as a swimming land, with supposition that her owne strength did beare it vp, when indeed the water it selfe supported it. From this Hirroglyphicke belike comes all this tumor and because the picture seemed to be so, but as Barnad sayd to the Lady (when the conferrings preists had caused her to bid him good morrow) yt it was not lawfull for women to speake in the church, so say I vnto you, here talke not any more about this matter. for as the vniuersall B.p. is the forerunner of Antichrist by your owne confession, and Gregories letter to John Patriarch of Constantinople, and so subiect to destruction. so this character of vniuersall King is but Nebuchadnezzars presumption, when he sayde is not this great Babell which I haue built, and the same night he was cast out amongst beasts./

I confesse I haue read of 4. Monarchies in Daniel and their passages, their invocation, their profession, their exaltation, their diminution & their dissolution, but except you can shew me another Daniel I will not beleiue any other monarchie, for although yt were a glorious object to act a part of such Soueraignity, yet it should seeme yee are like to tumor falso fruito, or that which is beaten of the cudgells before the time. for that you are both discouered & punished for growing ripe in such an ambitious conceite therefore (as I suppose) it were better for you to maintaine the cause bravely by confessing & putting as much into the scale of honor then to disclaime it by detracting the heroicks of their nation with exhumation of affrighting the enterprize, for what could the Romanes doe more with their colonies & prouinciall territories, garrisond, then you haue done by dangerous attempts, only their is the difference

ordained y^e thruing of their Monarchie by forcible and active imployment; you lack a Romane successe Romane discipline & Romane ability to yo^r willingnes. / I passe by yo^r invasion in 88. I will not name yo^r landing oftentimes in Ireland, for theyse were times of hostility, & of reciprocall damage between vs. But what have you to doe in France, to set opp the Ligers there, to raise y^e warrs in Brittaine, & stirr up your Worship in religion, to fuell the spirites with the wind of impossible hopes, y^t like full charged ordinances in the discharging burst them selves. to torment picardy, with opproares & to terrifie the whole country w^th yo^r Spanish dascocks. how came Savoy to be disturbed, & in a manner disposed by yo^r Garrisons? what hath Italy suffered euen to the dilaceration of her principalities? for therein you hold Sicilia, parma, Millaine, Genoa & many other fortifications. /

Nay it is well knowne you have devoured venice in conceyte & bin secret enimies to their importunities. the Alpes have bin transcended by you, & where you thought it advantageous for yo^r passages, you stored ney Rampiers w^th garrisons and built the fort turron amongst the Grisons, Hungary had yo^r souldiers, Bohemia wavered by yoūa promises, Austria yo^r armes, the low countryes yo^r Lieuftenants, Poland yo^r gold, & the whole Empire your subiects. and wherefore is all this? you made his Ma^ty of England beleive to support y^e howse of Austria, chasten the rebellious States, to ouerlooke ya princes, least their mightines grow to yo^r ruin. like an unnaturall warr of deformity, to keep France frō an union, and in a word to maintaine the cause of religion and he taks all in good part, or at least keepes correspondency w^th y^t fraternity, whereby gods kings style thē selues Gods vicegerents. so that for yo^r sakes he neither doth acknowledge his sonne in Law king of Bohemia, nor will assist him in his formidable enterprises. but for all this he not to presumptious, the Lamia had cleare eyes w^ch were deliuered to one another by course, till at last they were stolne away in the conueyance, you know the story. So is policy counterchanged among princes, & as it were lent to one another, for that leaped into advantagious respects, till at last truth and true Religion meete w^th thē, thē shall they

they meet no more or put them cleere out, and so yᵉ Monarchy shall be obscured. /

4. The extenuation of yᵉ Low Countryes greatnesse fourthly concearning the extenuation of the Low countryes greatnes oh that ever I should speake to have a king to let go so faire a hold in such full times of hypocrasy. was that for want of money, to deliver upp those Cautionary Townes into the hands of yᵉ States, who to keep thē better yⁿ the dragon did the golden apples of Hesperides. well this donne, and you would depresse their greatnesse, take heed, some flowers smell sweetest for being trod uppō, and when you come into a delicate garden, by stirring the hearbes, you make the stenche yᵉ sweeter, & so hath yᵗ fared between you, and the low Countryes.
Nature and yᵉ tyrannie hath so taught them the way of pᵉservation of their liberty, that they wᶜʰ were the subiects of yᵉ Duke of Burgandy, are now the maᵗᵉˢ of the king of Spaynes pᵗences. nay in these times they sett little by the Emperours greatnes, & now will lesse feare the viceroyes threatnings. for wᵗʰout controuersie they thinke uppon nothing but the sweetnes of liberty (wᶜʰ they entertaine as a donation from heaven) the progresse of the gospell, the multiplication of their renowne, the inlarging of territories, the maintaining of their shipping, their munitinq of their Townes, & raising of bulwarks, the encreasing of their armyes & auxiliary forces. what thē do you meane to do? will yee trample on the dead bodyes of men, and carkesses of horses, will yee come over pikes and halbards? will yee clime walls and stronge towers, will yee straddle over fortifications and rampiars, and pallisadoes? in a word can you stop the mouths of Canons, and cast so many soulders in a sudden into a graue? come, come, yee cannot, yᵉ forces be to weake. yᵉ foote are to tirrall, besides most part of the way you must tread uppon ice, and ice (you know) hath slippery footings, and unstedfast turnings, But you will

say if England matche wth Spayne yt combination will
open the narrow seas, & so you shall passe, and repasse at yo
pleasure & you may goe into England by the way uppo aduan-
tage of security, doing as the fellow sayd by his some, he would
teach him to be prowde. but he being therefor reprehended
replyed Ohe, it may be he is not capable of so high a matter
but if he meet wth cleanes and handsomes. by the way, yt is as-
much as I desire. so if you may step into Suffolke or North-
folke vnder colour of supplying ye Archdukes wants. oh they
be pleasant shoares, & yeeld other maner of things yn Orangers &
Lemons of smell.

But take heed deceive not yor selues, do not land wthout leave
for then St. Georges his dragon roumes, & St. James his staffe will
do noe good wthout St. Georges his lance, yet wch way so euer
yt goes, if you shall presume on such a licence all and more
then euer wee shall get by you, must be spent in rigging
out a many to ouerlooke yor intercourse, & to watch yt yee keep
the chancell against the harts wishes. come come deceive not yor
selues, how the women of England may doate vppon you I cannot
tell, but believe it their is neuer a Catholig gentlewoman in En-
gland will quit you leave to tread vppon their grounds by way
of invasion, or afford you so much as a footings, when they shall
heare of conquest, vsurpation, ambition, insulting, or shall suffer
you to stand upp right.

They will surely do by you, as that Vicount Mountagne stood
(viz) yt if his holy father the pope, came wth ye keys of peter to
convert his soule, and to reconcile him vnto salvation he would
& pray & do as far as he might euen kisse his feet, but if he came
wth poules sword & colours displayed to depresse ye crowne of
England he would rouse vpp him selfe & mount him selfe
uppo horseback, & be the first man should tumble his trippled
crowne in the dust.

But I believe in all yor marrying the king will not be so cunning
to trust you wth his seas, much lesse wth his shoares, but to do
wth you as H.4 of France did wth Biron, when he denyed the keep-
ing of St. Katherens fort, saying a king of his yeares must

not comit so great a Solecisme in gouerment, as to leaue the strongest fortresse of his country, in the hands of a commaunder in chiefe. and of this you haue experience in Naples, in Millaine & other countryes, where the Viceroies do not commaund the castles if then yt be so in matters of lesse consequence what is ymy[n] regall authority & supreme gouerment of such a matter as wth yt low countryes, they will keep time wth their neighbors proceedings & stand vppon their guard of circumspection, if suspicion do but wisp[r] there is any thing pretended against y[m], then shall you see their gards dubled their watches encreased their shippings inlarged, their campes continued, their voyages and treasures aduanced, and being wthout all feard of regis tides, will come whether you would not haue them yea according to the prouerbe pmonits, pmunits, will not of stubbernes care for you nor vs, if yee care not for them.

The abusing of englands simpliicity.

Fifthly concerning englands simplicity, you yt dispence wth so many infectious matches treasons rebellions murders and neuer bifore heard of impieties, may easily dispence wth one heroicall marriage when so great a prince so acceptable a gentleman, & so worthy an heroes is exposed vnto you, or as you say disposed by you, But you ayme at an other matter y the sweet embraues of amarous princes recouery of soules a complication of papistrie liberty of yor catholyq religion purification of the Lawes against recusants hope of children wch shall learne their mothers languages of factours wch aduise yor princes of deuotion wch shall be wth your ladies & therning of the Jesuit wch shall breed disturbance both of church & comon wealths (as watson the preist in his quodlibet hath brawled forbod) but why do yee boast of these things. call yee this decreasing of England. sure it is a decreasing of yor owne selues & the primitiue (I know) will be another creature by yt time she is seasoned wth England temperatured diet & good conditions, she will rather thank god for her happines & leaue her forreine cousen Katheren of Aragon to clinge close to the sides of her husband & meddle not farr wth state matters, yn the councell of England shall thinke fitt be imparted to her.

Otherwise if she should intertaine a spirit as some Elleanors of other times haue done in England namely by the wisest of the & Edw. 1. England is not so weake & silly but can deale wthout it hath done wth them & so they thinke they haue not y[e] same aduan now (if they had y[e] same cause) yes and far greater, considering

Scotland is united, from whence comes as braue hearts, strong armes & industrious men, as any be in Spayne. indeed I confesse you certaine coi= =ning tricks, wch wee haue not, you can transport our ordinance & ship them away under a colour of going against the mores & pirats, but I pray god, they be not one day turned against our bosoms, you can make vse of cloath, corne, and other clothings tempting us wth gold (let not wth golden promises) to betray vs. you preferre yor clergy frō temporall so that when you raise wright bookes, deuise pictures, raise up scandalls & run away wth all the filthinesse of seruility, & impu= =tation is layd vppō a clergy man & that puddle of infamy doth defame both you and vs, whereas wee dare neither speake, publish writ or preach any thing distastfull to yor gelousies. one is imprisoned for weighing a letter, another for telling a tale out of the west Indian con= =quest, another for making of a sermon, & diuerse others for wrighting & publishing bookes vnpleasant to yor eares & corasiue to yor heart thou they all tend to gods glory, ye honor of ye king, & dignity of their owne country and those be good things to boast indeed. //

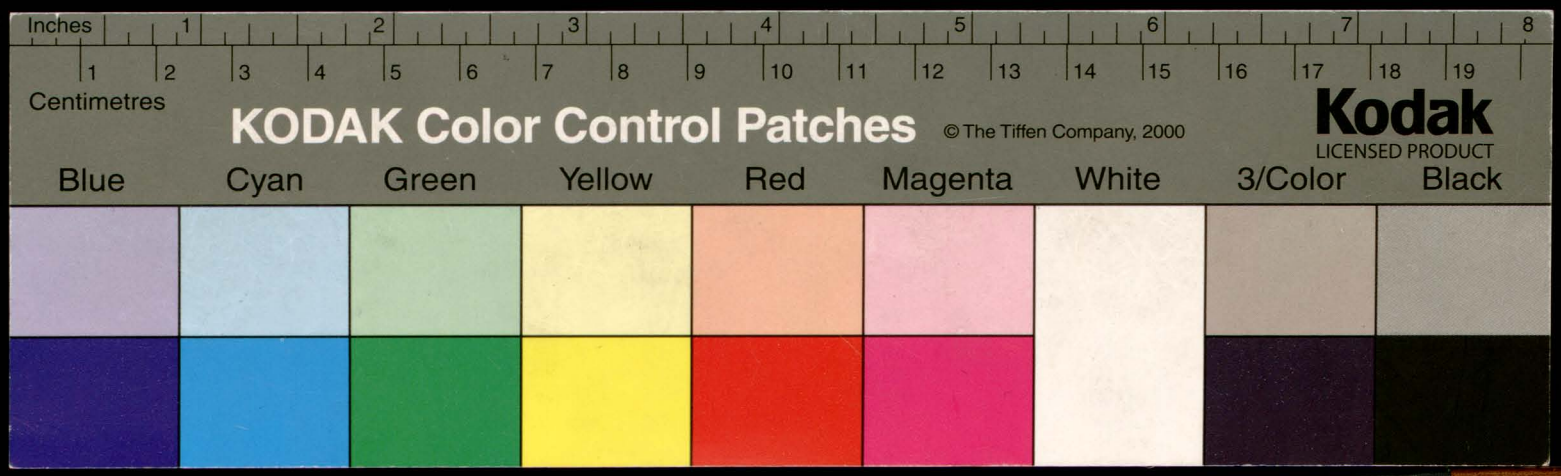
I remember wee had but one deuise of ye kings holding ye popes nose to ye grindstone, & of ye 2 Archbps. turning ye stone, & yet Seigior Gondamor complayned & got it suppressed, the plot was cut in peeces & the publisher imprisoned but it was written in many hearts, accor= =ding to the prouerbe nitimur in vetitū after ye prohibition en= =mor was more large then before but you haue pictures & pictu= =res againe, wth cloths of arms against H. 8. & against his children in one place yee pictured him with a scabert wthout a sword, in an= other place ye pictured him wth a sword, yt no body can draw out In Brugells in his house and doublet wth his pockets hanging out & neuer a penny in them, In Antuerpe you painted the queene of Bohemia like an Irish kibbar, her haire dishevelled, a child at her backe in a mantle, the king her father carrying the cradle for her, those be good thinges to boast of indeed, & sweet things to let passe vnpunished, you clapt yor hands for ioy when you made ye fuspitious Earle transport the body of his Ma^ty mother, from Bet= =hersowe to a sumptious tombe in westm^r causing some of our Bpp. to attend ye solemnity by torch light after ye catholicke manner. princes (I confesse) are worthy of honor, but you were vnworthy to mocke our plats for their inconstancy and lukewarmnesse, & what did yee madd men meane a while agoe to sit in or kings chaire of state. yee presumed to say yt seeing the count palatine had lost Bohem[ia] it would not be amisse to make him king of virginia. what should I say, I what haue you not done to extenuate or glory & aduance your owne osta= =tation, and all the hope ye king would be led in yor golden chaine & could not subsist wthout ye wealth of spayne and are ye not ashamed of these things, & how dare you deride vs in this maner. /

In those dayes wherein wee had finished such magnificent structures

& performed such invaluable actions yo^r Prince was but named a prince of figgs & roisons, & your country thought upon but as a beggerly Iland, how euer after (through or default) ye got the Indies. / Can Spayne shew me such a peece of worke as Hen: 7. chappell tell me of so much wealth, as H. 8 expended, match me w^th such a Iubile as Cardinall wolsey. / and can Spayne do such things as Q. Eliz. did, & all of late dayes when England was vilipended for wealth why fooles, it is well knowne y^t England hath spent more at a triumph, then a great princes dowry, and now let yo^r infante bring what she can by y^t time y^e ~~time~~ ceremonies be past the p^sents giuen, the K^g intertained, the strangers welcomed, and all things finished I pray god there be sufficient : amuffe to furnish whit hall w^th a quadrant of Stabo. / But (as I sayd in the beginning) when I am gone, you will go neere to laugh at me if you durst for this discovery shall be so heauie on yo^r soules, y^t you shall not be able to contract a browe, yea I see you tremble already, and I meand to affright you no further then w^th this caution, go not away w^th conceyte of englands simplicity, or poverty, for they know all yo^r trickes & can (when they list) w^thstand your collusions, how euer they vse a kind of connniency, for some speciall purpose, in this disturbance of Europe, I can be bold to say they can rouse up themselues & shew their talents w^th y^e Panther wh^ch either I pray it worthy the hauing, or w^thin their reaches. Therefor I leaue you to yo^r selues, but take heed of yo^r owne tortures & exercciations, wherein you find all yo^r purposes frustrated, & yo^r ouer reaching projects annihilated. w^th that he vanished, and w^th the steddy burning torches, & dimd lights he had left them more like ghosts then himselfe, had not father Baluino (who was neuer death then the others) broke vpp the assault concluding y^t he found it was his owne funerall, & he would p^pare to set his house in order, for he should not long liue ——

~~The~~ ~~Miss~~ petition to

~~Most gracious~~ an


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

Scti Musarū Cantabrigiensiū

Bonū factū. C. M. PROcan. Acad. Cant.
111° die Julij SENATVM in N. Sacello Musarū habebat.
Qui patres, qui conscripti quibusq; in S. veniendi jus et
opportunitas erat ex edicto frequentes aderant.
De authoritate Regiâ, De subjectione Populi agendū —
Esset vix monuerat Procan. cū murmur it, & submissæ patrū voces.
Non morans Rogationē cōfs.
Omnis anima potestatibus supereminentibus subdita non est potestas
nisi a deo, potestates quæ sunt, sunt a deo ordinatæ. Quisquis —
opponit se potestati ordinationi dei resistit. Qui resistunt
ipsi sibi condemnationē acquirunt.
Per diffīciliā Curiæ stetit, quo minus succlamarēt
Omnes. Omnes.
Relatio igit quam mox fit datisq; de more singuli suffragijs
qui consultando adsint, sententia tandē ab vno omnes proferantur
In istā Scti scribendi formulam.
Quod C. M. Procan. V. F. de summa Potestate
Monarchicâ: de eâ Rē. S. P. Q. C.
Regem in suo regno pie adfari uno minorem Deo.
Post D. Opt. Max. veri nominis in omnibus Monarcham.
Deo regnare, Deo jurare, Deo teneri, & terra nato nemini.
Ne peccet deus solus videbit, si peccet solus vindicaverit.
Qui religionis larvam nouis rebus obduxerint damnatæ fidei sunto.
Vulcano victa facta victima: quius dei obtentu turbellas in
populo dandi authores fuerint, capitalē se feruint facere.
Plebi supplicationes sunt volutæ, Patrum consilia, utriusq; bona.
Nihil est aliud —
Impia regū et sua dimisit deus abs intercessionibus tribunitijs,
piaculū omnes superat nē labat pietas pietatē si labere.
Ea Rē Senatui placere.
Theologis nostris curæ de delectu auctorū in studijs.

D. Paraeus Bucanus auctor Vindiciarū in tyrannos hoc nomine aeternū infamiq; sunto. Si qui alij similiter senserint scripserint deformati prius stigmatū nostrorū notis ad ignes ad cloacas damnetor. Nemo laudet, nemo temerè legat sibiue habeat sacra capita.

Qui secus faxit, is mulctā quā Acad. dixerit, daro damnās esto.
Ni quis horū mentē iuraverit haeresios arguto esto.

Haec Musarū Censura est C. M. Procan.

Perlegerant coss. Universus senatq; exclamat
Placet. scribite
Sic sentimq, sic censemq sic volumq
Repetitū in plurios
Fgitq quod felix faustumq, sit reip. ~~Tra~~ Tractiae
Ecclesiae dei, pijs Xtianis
Sctū istud relatū est in acta Academiae
Tum nihil moramur vos Patres C. inquit Procan.
et S. mittits.

Tiberius.

Augustus of famous memory, having cõcluded ye last act of his life, and
ta. an. empyre, ye citty was partly possessed wth a lamentation for ye losse of so gra-
cious a Soveraigne, partly wth an expectation of wt ye present change might
greater produce. Great was ye lamentation, yet ye losse (wch) could not bee understood,
till ye vices of Tiberius had given a lustare to ye vertues of Augustus. Their
Ca. C. 4. expectations were various according to ye divers humours and unlike capa-
cityes in ye affaires of ye state. Some thought it a convenient time to recover
ye lost libertie: but in vayne: for even ye good Primes Augustus had so poli-
tiqly handled ye affayres of ye cõmon wealth, that he became capable
of security, though not yet a slave. Most were busiest in discovering ye
summe, and among them ye deepest ingaged ye fortune into ye occasion. The
Sept. 11. competition was like to bee betweene Tiberius and Agrippa; a bad —
choyse for ye cõmon wealth, both naturally cruell, but Tiberius of ye bitter
Sept. 14. education: Agrippa violent, but Tiberius cũning, both bloody. But Tiberius
taking a ready course to prevent Agrippaes clayme, by ye stroke of a Centu-
rion sent on purpose to dispatch him, climbes by degrees a supreame pow-
er, wch was his designe, but his indeavor wth all to worke ye Senate,
(for his greatter reputation) that he might seeme rather to be chosen,
then to creepe in by ye canvasing of a woman, an adoption of an
Ca. 4. Uxorious father in law: to yt purpose hee appointed his frends yr parts
in ye senate to bewayle ye miserable estate of an head-lesse cõmõwealth,
Ca. 4. 4. to beseech him to cõmiserate his country, and to undertake her protectiõ:
But hee renounceth ye burthen, as too great for any single man after —
Augustus to undertake, and rather wishes yt among ye worthy person-
ages, wherwth ye city was replenished, some principall man might be —
elected, by yr vnited wisedome to manage ye Cõmon-Wealth. They ofte
offer, and hee as often refuseth; till as it were tired wth yr importunitie,
hee accepts it on this condition, that they should ere long give him leave
to spend his old age in quiet. Thus did hee ascend ye imperiall throne in
lived with cloake of dissimulation, wch immediatly after hee lived in cruelty. ~
certainly his nature was equally poysed wth cunning and cruelty: yet in ye ~
East of his empire, dissimulation overweighed: but in ye west tyranny being ~
made heavy wth ye assurance of his state. His entrance was moderate
Ca. 9 partly for feare of the discontented legions whose immoderate demãds ~
were alike dangerous to be granted or reiected: partly for ye worth of ~
p. 11 Germanicus his some by adoption, Augustus his nephew, and some to ~
Ca. 5. Drusus, whose memory did rather reigne then live in ye hearts of true ~
Romans, who honoured him as one, yt if hee had gayned ye sterne of ~
ye

ye cõmõ-wealth, would have restored yr anchient liberty, wch was precious
Fidem A Sueth. to yr memorie, and deare to yr hopes: neither had it bin difficult for Ger-
manicus to have wrested ye helme from Tiberius, so great were ye strength
of his legions, neither did he want inticements from his owne cõdition
wrapped up in execrable dangers, partly from Liviaes deadly malice to Ag-
grippina, partly from ye iealousies of ye Emperor, wch he knew nothing but
his death could assuage: for it is held a dangerous poynt to have only
refused an Empire, wch being offered to a man, argues yt he is hedd
worthy to reigne, and so is esteemed a ready pilott to any innovacõn
But so greatt was ye illrequited loyalty of Germanicus, yt ye nearer
The end of Nero fro ye beginning of Galba. he was to ye highest top, to more he laboured to establish Tiberius in
ye Empire, and by ye vertue and valour of ys worthy generall, ye mutinous
Ca. 6. souldiers were reduced to good order, ye bordering enimies chastised, and the
T. 6. ex lio. wavering fidelity of ye Emperors allies recõfirmed But see wt rewards merits
so great received from ye hands of a tyrant. Piso immediatly after was ray-
Su. 4 10. sed to reigne; Germanicus a fitt instrument by reason of his insolent disposi-
l. 17. tion, and harsh carriage; and ye rather because his wife Placina, was a wo-
man of an haughtie stomack, and therfore apt to disturbe ye greatt spirit
of Agrippina. It is certaine Germanicus came suddenly to his end, at wch hee
bequeathed ye revenge of his unlimely death to his dearest freinds, whose faith-
full endeavours therin deserved cõmendations. And thus was ye Empire be-
reaved of ye hopefullest Prince yt ever ye world beheld; yet the Emperour thought
himselfe in better case, then before; Monarchs being seldome delighted wth the
plausible behavior of yr children. But Tiberius had an hard part to act
by affording iustice to ye playntife, and not suffering any of ye defendants to be
so farre pressed wth dispayre, as to beeway his owne interest, wch he exactly
C. 3. l. 1. performed in his ambiguous directions to ye Lords of ye Senate, as they sate
l. 2. C. 19. in iudgement. It was impossible for him to rescue Piso from ye rage of ye peo-
ple, and therfore ye best way was, by a private to prevent a publiq execu-
tion; least that might have extorted from ye party cõvicted, a cõfession yt would
have discovered ye guilt of her selfe, and another to whome Placina was most
deere; and by whose power she was rescued from ye iust reward of her wick-
ed practice. Thus did the cũming tyrant both mioy ye villany, and forge ye
villany, wherby he saved his reputation wth ye cõmon people; who are well
satisfied, wn ye meere instrument is offered up in sacrifice to yr discontents, yth
wall led cõdemned Piso hodwinkd to ye last blow, wth fayre hopes of delivery
who as it is thought had produced ye Emperors letters and cõmission against Ger-
manicus, had he not bin deluded by ye vayne promises of Sejanus, who at this time
was ye principall object of ye Princes favour. But ye storme being over, ye Empe-
li. 1. C. 16. ror was desirous to satisfy ye sad citizens for yr lost Germanicus, and not being
able to force his nature to an affable behaviour, wherby his predecessours had
much indeared to them ye hearts of this people, wch want had made him
Li. 3. C. 1. to avoyd popular assemblies; therfore he used these meanes to suite the
minds

minds of ye people, by comending ye Sonnes of Germanicus to ye senate, and be-
sides he gave to wife Julia ye daughter of Drusus his owne Sonne, whose wife
Su. p. 47. Livia and daughter to Germanicus, was about yis time delivered of maletwinnes,
wch gaue occasion of ioy to ye Empero^r, but of sorrowe to ye people, who feared
li. 2. c. 19. least by increase of Drusus Children should depresse Germanicus howse. But this
artificiall courting of ye people was soone given over, and fresh discontents
perplexed ye state: The empero^r still increasing in cruelty, ye credit of infor-
mers grew so greatt, yt yis base trade was practised by ye nobility, yis accusa-
tion of treasons licensed, ye nearest freinds of ye defendants, ye Princes presence
did often beare downe ye innocent: sometimes they were by ye dispayre of iustice
driven to be their owne executioners: in wch case ye tyrant did delude ye world
wth a maske of piety, and would complaine that he was prevented of shewing
mercy. But ye greattest grievance to ye state, was yis favorite Scianus,
Su. p. 54. interest to ye Prince in managinge of his cruelties, and (as ye people thought) his
instigato^r. He was by birth a Gent. and in his yonger dayes he suffered
his body to be abused: his character wee finde to be this, of an active
body and bold spiritt, in his owne actions secret, and an informer against
others, as proud as flattering, in shew modest, but inwardly greedy of aspiring
This man was rayssed by ye Empero^r, not out of affection, but meerly as
an instrumt, by whose treachery ye children of Germanicus might be cir-
li. 3 cumvented, and to inable him to so great worke, noe hono^r was to great nor
C. 15. power to stronge for Scianus, he may rayse meane men to great dignities
and to his will ware sacrifised ye worthy pillars of ye comō-wealth. it is in vaine
to sue for either yt wch is aymed at by his kindred, or may seeme to eclipse
yr glory: they that hono^r him, win ye princes affection, and they that sue gott to
Suet. p. 4 him for favour are deprived of yr due reward. In ye senate ye greattest coun-
A. l. 4 C. 9. sellors of ye senate bow to him: ye Empero^r extolls him as an associate of his la-
bours and suffers his images to be in ye theatres, in ye publiq places of assem-
blyes, and in ye ensigns of ye Legions: And whosoever ye Prince relyes himselfe
frō ye city, either perswaded by Scianus, or els to avoyd ye eyes of ye world
and ye care of ye Empire, yt so he might be the more secret, and freely
abandon himselfe to his filthy lusts: Acces to Scianus (ye only conduite of ye
Princes favo^r) was harder yn to ye Empero^r himself; ye best suitors must be glad to
gaine it wth much servility and crouching, and (wch was more cōtemptible) they
must run ye hazard of a most proud incounter from ye Favorites Porter. This
was a great Vexation to ye state, but ye ready way to effect ye Empero^rs pur-
pose: for Scianus was growen soe arrogant, yt he fell upon ye Princes of ye blood
ye miserable reliques of worthy Germanicus, whose whole family was allotted
to dissolution both by Tiberius and Scianus, but wth severall aymes: Tiberius
partly to be freed from dangerous uproars, himselfe being infinitely hated:
But ye Sonnes of Germanicus now growen to yeares of perfection, and by ye
memory of yr father, ye only idols of ye multitude; partly to establish
li. 4. C. 1. ye empire in his owne line, by extinguishing ye other: But ye minds of Se-

ianus

was to roote them out both, y^t for he might obtaine y^e Empire for himself: Thus
farre were y^r designs distant, yet they both agreed in y^t, each to defer y^e others
reigne for y^e last act. This was y^e disposition of Tiberius, though he could
not indure y^e minister of his wickednes should be punished by others, yet w^ch he had
his fill of y^r service, fresh still being offered to c̄tinue this trade, he would
himselfe suppresse y^e old, and y^e ambition of over raysed Sejanus did not rest
in y^e c̄tinuance of his maisters favour, but was fixed upō his mas-
ters fortune: Therfore as he practised y^e overthrow of Nero and Drusus
sonnes to Germanicus, to serve his maisters turne: soe he c̄trived y^e death of
Drusus his maisters sonne to serve his owne, w^ch he procured by a lin-
gring poyson to avoyd suspition: whose death Tiberius tooke not very heavily
(allthough his owne sonne) and in a lesser degree, morū quog filius, heire to his
vice, being indeed not possessed w^th that naturall affec̄tion, w^ch vseth to beare
rule in y^e hearts of other parents towards y^r children: yet here is a mus-
reward of a wicked practise, y^e Emperor looseth his owne sonne by y^e traine w^ch
he had layd for others: But Sejanus thus imboldened by y^e good successe of
his first attempts, layes plots to remoove all y^e vndoubted heires of y^e Em-
pire, y^e children of Germanicus w^th y^r mother Agrippina, y^e emperor still favour-
ing and furthering his vndertakings; and w^th all to adde nobility and cre-
dit to his power, he sues to y^e Emperor being but a Gent. borne, for leave
to marry Livia Drusus widdow, and sister to Germanicus: This was an im-
dent suite, yet Sejanus thought himselfe above repulse, but y^e Cæsar
answeres him w^th a c̄plaint, and rather seeing y^t denyes y^t requeste: In y^e
meane time Agrippina, w^th her 2 eldest sonnes are clapt up in prison, C.S. Li.
y^e execution deferred to stop y^e rage of y^e citizens w^ch a vayne hope Deferers
of y^e Emp^rs relenting. Now was Sejanus so swollen w^th ambition, that he
must needs vent and breake; therfore he ever hasting his c̄spiracie
not able to moderate his course; w^ch is difficult for a meane man rayse
to very high fortunes, and reaching to y^e highest.

Nescia mens hominū fati, sortisq; futurę
Et servare modū rebus sublata secundis.

These are his wayes to Soveraintie, he woes y^e soldiers, he courts y^e senators
he reduceth to discipline y^e disordered cohorts, he doth advance his fol-
owers to greatt offices and hon^rs and rule of provinces, he is as industrious
as bountifull: by these arts he grew so potent, y^t he was a terr^r to his m^r
who discovers y^e danger but allmost too late: for his credit w^th y^e people
was vent from y^r hearts, by y^e reigne of y^r fellow citizens, his power
was ingrossed by his emmis vnder pretence of his service, only y^e state
of pollicy left to vnderprop y^e shaken Empire: and indeed he even prevay-
led more w^th a foxes trayle, then w^th a lions skin: Therfore he dissem-
his icalousies, and seemes so far frō suspecting his Sejanus, as he did
Suet. 4. 56. chuse him his colleague in y^e Consulship, w^ch title he vndertooke as
y^e time only to court him w^th, and entertaines him w^th a hope of his al-
ance and y^e Tribunall dignity, till vnawares he surprised him, for
he

he was cut of by ye forces of a long epistle indited by Tiberius feare &
treachery, and while ye accusatiō was a framing: Tiberius gave order y^t if Se-
ianus faction should oppresse Drusus (ye next vnbutchered sonne of
Germanicus) should be releast out of prison (and consyluled as cap-
proffed to ye infinite joy of ye Emperours forces: But Sejanus ye supp-
ficis of ye Princes favō, neither discerning, ye cause, ye extent, nor cōsequence;
for first it had bin a noble act if Sejanus had bin crushed as ye Emp. pretend-
ed, for ye insolencies cōmitted against ye house of Germanicus, or those noble Ro-
mans whose lives and fortunes suffered shipwrack during his greatness:
But ye cōscience of Sejanus was deeper died in ye guilt of those cruel-
ties, yt Tiberius; and secōdly if ye executiō had bin moderate, ye Emperors
feare had bin excusable, but excessiu medicina modū, playsters applyed by
to rought an hand prove often remedie
able yt for ye offence of Sejanus all his periculi prova: it was Caesar
troyed guilty or not guilty: all his familie of wch age forever; in so much his
daughter a meere child, for hir tender age not apprehensive of her owne
danger, must first be ravished, then strangled by ye barbarous executioner
and lastly if ye cōdicō of ye cōmō wealth had but bin amended by ye Se-
verity, it might well have bin esteemed a happy rigor: But foolish plebei-
ans, Macro was chosen to supply Sejanus, because he was worse yn hee
and oftner did afflict ye cōmōwealth wth greatter calamitie, yet he joyed
at ye destrucō of Sejanus, wth his family and adherents, wch may teach
all wch are carried wth ye streame of publiq favour, to exercise moderation
whilest they flow, least they want cōmiseratiō wn they ebbe: But ye pre-
cept will easier bee believed by meane men, then practised by great
ong: But Tiberius thus shaken and not throwne downe, was greatter then
before, and by ye cōfidence of his state produced, increase of his cruelty
so yt noe day though dedicated to ye strictest ceremony of devotion, but
was stained wth blood: The Emp. rather neglecting religion, because he held
the world to be guided by fate, wch caused him to make noe provision for his
soule after death and decease of his body, though even ye light of na-
ture had taught other heathens, yt there was a felicity ordained for ye
soules of ye vertuous: But ye Emp. course of life altogeather voyd of co-
dition, made him rather addicted to ye mathematicians, who refer all things
to destiny, then to ye Philosophers, who prescribd away whereby ye end wch
yt happing may be attained. But wn cōsorl could ye tyrant repe fro
ye severe precepts of philosophers, whose cruelty was wthout remorse, whose
lusts were wthout limits, for neither is it fitt for a modest pen
nor a chaste eare to expresse or refrayne ye various shapes of his immod-
erate lusts, wch in his declining dayes did noe whit decrease his beast-
ly appetite, wch to satisfy or rather cherish wth new inventions, to wch
he so devoated himself that he regarded not ye government of ye Country
ye discipline of warre was neglected, wch had gayned and maintained ye
greatnes of ye nation, yr cōfederats and allys were abandoned and ransackt
By yr enmitie, to ye greatt dishonr and no lesse danger of ye Roman Em-
pire:

Kodak Color Control Patches © The Tiffen Company, 2000 KODAK LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue Cyan Green Yellow Red Magenta White 3/Color Black
Centimetres Inches

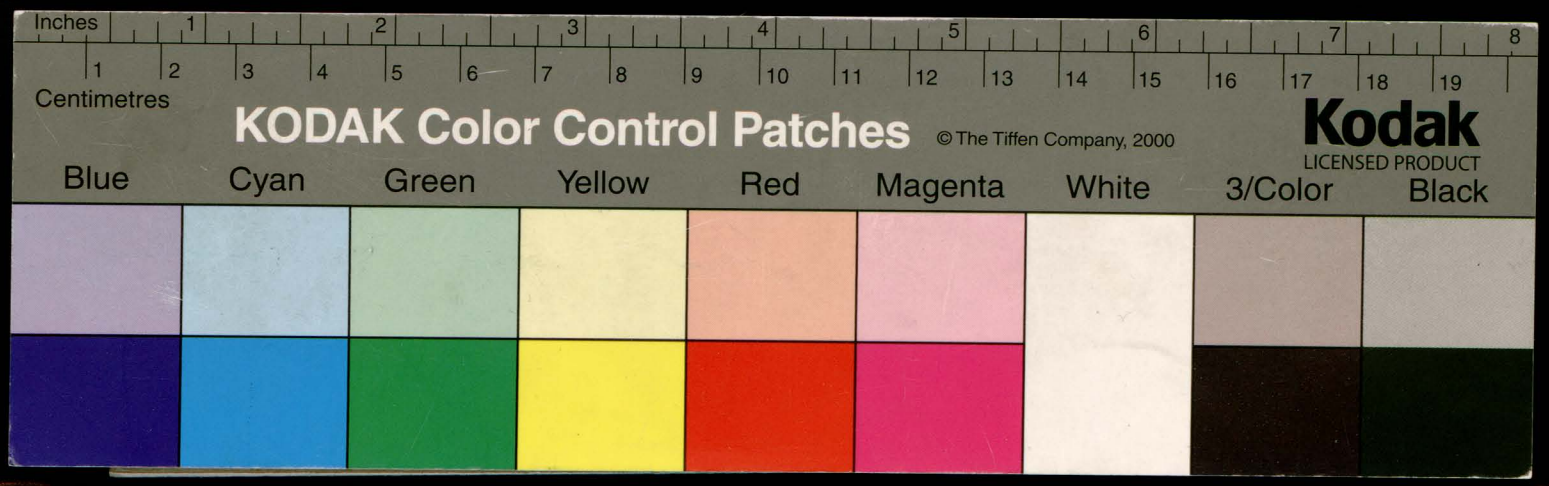
B L

oh
w^ch courses cōpared w^th his policies at Rome, to insinuate y^e subordinate L^s powers,
y^t y^e supreame might be more absolute, makes me cōceiue y^t y^e drift in
all his gouernm^t was but to gaine quiet for y^e exercise of his lasc-
not regarding y^e cōdition of y^e Empire after his owne decease; for now y^e Se-
l.3.C.13. nate and counsell as well admired as honoured by y^e whole world, and
w^ch was wont to haue a superintendency ouer y^e affayres of y^e whole empire
retained, but a vaine title w^thout a substance, and y^t so awed by y^e Emp
rour, y^t it is a meere witnes of his decrees: But Tiberius by his cruell g
l.4.C.9. uernm^t and filthy life exposed himselfe as well to reproach at home as
scorne abroad: and his guilty minde was so troubled w^th dispersed li-
bells; though he inlarged y^e exposition, and iudged euery offence cap-
itall, euen to y^e uttering of a few simple and disgraceful words of
his life and gouernm^t, uttered as legacies of those that groaned Un-
der y^e burthen of his tyranny; and yet he knew not well how hee
should take them, sometimes seeming to slight them, and sometimes
through shame he would suppresse them, sometimes he would be y^e pub-
lisher of them himself. But now he growes old, falls sick, and re-
ceaues y^e summons of death, none of his policies or treachery cā free
him from this surprise: yet it might seeme conuenient, ere wee bid him
farewell to take a view of his Vertues, but they were so few and so
weak, y^t they could not be well discerned from y^e thick mist of his Vi-
therfore I hasten for his wished end, where wee shall finde him full
of discōtents, besides y^e torment of a bad cōscience Occultū quatiet an-
Tus. Lictor lora flagellum, to see his favorite forsake him, and y^e child of
Cill. Germanicus ready to succeed him, and last he y^t had deprived so
many men of y^r lives, should himself dye an vnnaturall death. a.
Here wee may see him smothered in y^e bed of sickne, when he was
ready to give up y^e ghost, w^ch verifies y^t of y^e poet

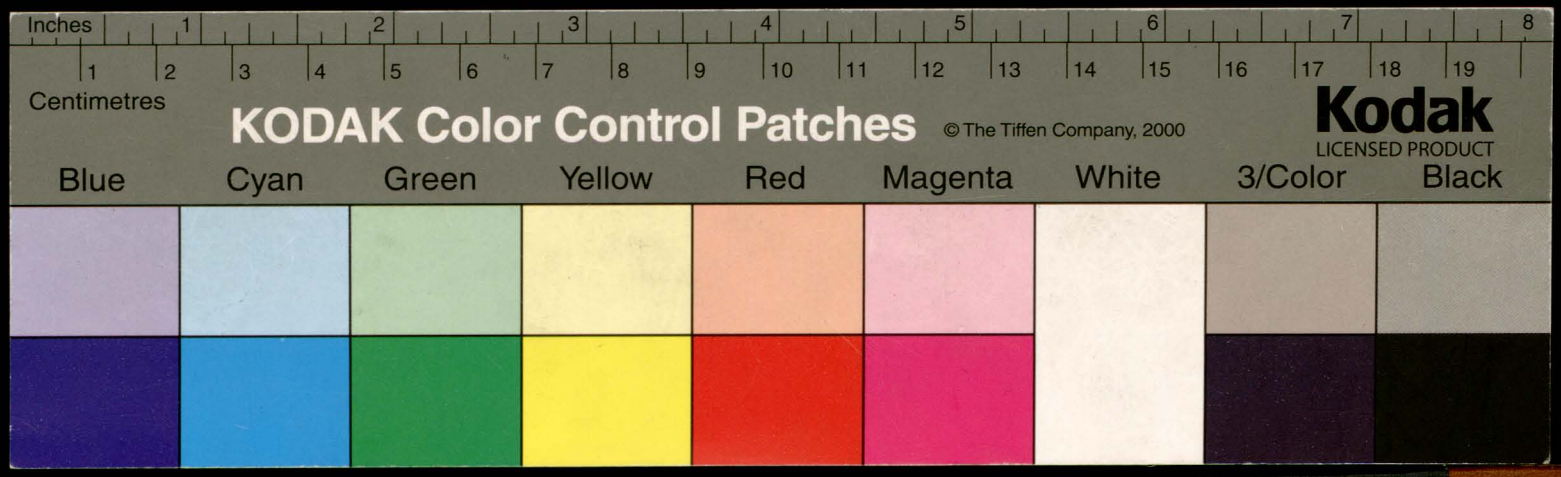
Ad generū sine cede d sanguine pauci
Descendunt regg d sicca morte tyranni.

This barbarous act, though practed on a tyrant, was cōtriued by Macro
greatest in y^e Empero^rs fauo^r, and Caligula designed by him to succeed.
But howsoeuer y^e treachery was performed, it was most ioyfully welcomed
by y^e people, for it is euer y^e lott of a wicked Prince to dye vnlamented.

Finis.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

61


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

Vpon proofe and iudgm^t had by dooms appointed
Condemn'd to dy against all law and reason,
A sentence printe, one of ye lords annointed,
And found Estrange, without allegeance treason,
The hangman stoode amazed to proceede
To act the office, shunning so foule a deede.
Is pitty you in hangman and in sheele
God graunt hereafter nober may be seene
Within his realme without a Iust a queene.

Now Ireland is
Past all praise
And neare to be reclaimed.
Virginia is ye only place
Where you it to be gained
There are no Rebells yet,
To kill be reason we subsist,
Ther's nothing yat we need to feare
But only to adventure.
Ther's wood as good like wormwood as beer
There flax and hemp, grows
You may buy linnen for Goodlet Grimet,
Ther law for you no more.
Ther's beefe and mutton vpays,
As good as we have any.
Heere Capons for a groate
And hennes eggs a penny.

The man that dyd go Scottish mind
Hand left Edenborough towne,
Ye ocian so yor gold hir gonne gold
Doth put ye Scottish doleone.
Their Ships are ready hir mand
Their Cannons hand gone thayre,
And all things are prepared,
To grand Virginia voyage.
Lett Spaniyards boast of golden Cage,
How if ye book be hand
Ther's ye land where gold is found
Wch puttoth downe yorw
Ther's ye golden flocce
For, we do adventure nothing
Shall hand hould pounds a peece,
And in hand ye are but ten shilling.
The quint-essence of London pride,
And many gold-ex together:
Yr sabin tall Ships embargued yer be
Expecting wind and weather.
Ther's cutpurse great store,
And many a roaring limber
Ther's tapster by ye shore
Desirous ye bunder Timber.

50

All Gost of Nature Gate dowide
To grave to woode and wodd
Lowe is ye lowe and luskie dowe
to Lord eare man may spod.
Ab doggs and bitches moste
And ewghs smelling tarrie,
So do o' gallants meet
And going to Kirk and marrie.
To Cupids Gaute to goe youthes an sport,
And sone dotaid Yeares ago.
Are now Ecclod to report,
And ye Yt pilgrimage.
A Chaplin Newport goe
Yr person will Yow goe:
To voiage grat'st shall be
By a lord Delaware too.
All yose yt wade ole Explorid
Do now prognosticate
That o' Virginia Colonie
Shall boaste ye Roman state.
For Yor vaine wandring Knights
Wch Romulus did flie to.
Wch matchst wt Sabine women
And robd yor past abuse do.
And yt so famous y land

IRC

Kodak Color Control Patches © The Tiffen Company, 2000 LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue Cyan Green Yellow Red Magenta White 3/Color Black
Inches Centimetres

B L

The Lord Londonders so nurse.
The king and state to gratulate—
Cates called it Britton's busse.
And if yt it be true
As I and yours it tells you
Nothing but Virginia roare
For ever shall be soth your.

Id Carmen.

Thou art my one wish I bear about me
With you I have not will. nor will without you.

Eight humors in youre men.
Hoskins is merily—sad
H: Sharpe is Learnedly mad.
Ch: Cor: is popishly provise
Wat: Shoote is ignorantly wise.

Ad Lo: Tu:

Solon would need to be wise as he was just,
And just as Job in all his qualities:
And to be Job least men might doubt him
He had a many scabs about him.

As Cats ouer houses do go á catter-walting
So Cis ouer houses he goes á walter-rauling.

Two Rs two crouns — both — sat at the helme,
The one spoild ye Nobility, th'other the realme.

On Essex.

England ye Edward prime is gone, good knight
Thy cheife Nobilitie is now á K.

Epitaphs &c.

On Francis Flower.

Heere lies Flos florum. Justice of peace and Quorū,
He loued harum horum. and now greiues full sorum,
That he can haue no morum.

Sir Hon: Palanicino.

Heere lies á tall theife. No thief. thou liest,
For tis no theaft, to steale from Antichrist.

To eodem.

Heere lies sir Floratio of trone of Babram
Who was taken to the bosome of Abraham.
That cannot be, for Hercules met him wth his club,
And beate him downe to Belzebub.

A drunkard at Plimmouth

Heere lies he buried vnder this gravell,
That had this misfortune at his first travell.
Wales had his birth, Ireland gave his good face
The sea had his stomach, Plimouth his gold-lace,
His father was a painter, and drove many good pattes.
And this gentleman slew a man, yet living at Saint Caterins.

Frank Worth.

Heere lies Frank Worth, & sonn of a beare-ward,
Who would needs brave armes in sight of ye hevens
A rampant lion as black as a jet-stone,
With a sword in his hand in steed of a whet-stone
Five sonns had ye syre. It's worth ye rehearsing,
Two were extand lyers, and three were hangd for stealing.

On that brak his neck.

My freind judge not me,
Thou shalt not judg not thee.
Betweene the stirrop and ye ground,
Mercie I askd, mercie I found.

Mr Sanders

Who would live in others breaths
Fame because the dead mans trust,
Where o' names do change by death:
Sands I was, and now am dust.

Daniell of the temple.

Here Daniell lies. whose horn when he did blow it,
Call many y^t^ hau hornes, and yet did not know it.

A Horse-courser.

Here lies a man whose horse did game,
The bell in race of Salsbury plaine
Reader, I know not whether need it
You or y^e^ horse rather to read it.

A maried Bishop.

Here lieth y^t^ the world may see,
The first Bishop married to a Ladie, Ladie.
The manner of his death was secret and hid,
He cry'd out, I die boy, and so he did.

Jhon Footit.

Mr Aysters look to't, Here lies Jhon Foott.

Jhon Vergis.

Here lies Jhon Vergis for saving of charges.

Of the porter of Winchester gate.

At lenght by ye wondrous work of fate,
Here lies ye porter of Winchester gate,
Who if he be gone to heaven as I feare
Cannot be much more then a porter there.

Little said

Little said is soon amended,
Now I die my life is ended.

On y^t sought not death.

Here lies one, who would have thought it's
That sought not death and yet he cought it

On ye Queen of Scots.

What eare thou be yt passest by
Curse him yt caus'd this Queene to dy

Short was her life, yet dyed ther ever,
Death hath his due, yet dyes she never.

On Luce Morgan

Here lies fine Luce ~~Morgan~~ yt Light-hatch Drabbe;
That had a Prat for every Stubb.
As Letcherous as any Sparrow
Her quiver apt for every arrow,
Were long, or short, or black or white
She would be sure to nock it right.
Were lords or Knights, or Preists or Squiers
Or any sort except a Friers.
A Friers shaft shee lackt alone,
Because in England yow was none.
At last some Bettall fire shee stole,
Which never went out in hir hole,
And with yt Golden fire being burned
Vnto the Popish faith shee turned,
And so in dyd. And ist not fitt
For a Whore whore to die in it:
Since that's ye true religion,
Of the great whore of Babilon.

Fat Giulio

Here lies fat Giulio who capered in a cord
To highest heav'n, for all his huge great weight,
His freinds left at Tiburne in ye yeare of o Lord
One thousand, five hundred ninetie and eight,
What part of his body ye french did not eate
That part he gives freely to wormes for their meate.

To a freind.

Looke man before thee how thy death hasteth,
Looke man behinde thee how thy death wasteth,
Looke

Here lyes buried warmes meate,
Little Robin ye^t was so great
Not Robin good fellow, nor Robin hood,
But Robin ye^d doe ill ye^t noboy did good.
One ye^t was sent by an angrie fate
To plague his country and ye^d state.
His life was full of mischievous ends,
Traines for his foes, and trickes for his freinds.
Now I am sure we have earthd the foe,
That shooke while he lived, and dyde of ye^ woe.

Here lies Hobnall our shepheard whilear
ye^t once a yeare duelie our fleeces did shear
to praise vs, his Curre he chaind — a dogge
& was — himselfe both shepheard & dogge:
for oblation to pan his manner was thus,
himselfe gave a trifle & offred vp vs.
so thus by his ~~ye~~ wisedome this politick swaine
kept himselfe on the mountaine & vs on plaine
& many a Lovespipe he tuned to his Phyllis
& sweetly sang Watsinghā to Amaryllis
mean while neither wolfe nor fyre feared we,
for never could come a worse beast then hee
till Atropos payd him a penie o the double
In spight of his tawnecoate he dyed o the stable

At Hatfield neare Hartford there lies — a coffin,
a heartbreaking Harpie of shape like a dolphin
whose projects & plots did all of the tend
to cozin the King & the state to offend..
his traines his countermines & his Granadoes
were all to endanger by close ambuscadoes.
with tricks & devices & fraier in maine,
he plaid the infant twixt Fra Engl & Spaine.
he fained religion & zealous affection
yet favoured the Papists & gave priests protection
by swearing protesting & damnable lyes
he stole the Kings favours & blinded his eyes.
but yet though he had all the wiles of a fox
he could not prevent her yt gave him the p
twixt Suffolk & Wall- he often did journy
to tilt at the one at the other to tourny
— wch Lot — encountr he gott such a blow
as could never be cured by Atkins nor Poe.
no more the rare Frenchman cured his old
could doe him good with his oyles or his pla
for that his disease was given him by his
& therefor he had reason to keepe it to his

Advance, advance my ill disposed Muse
With vncouth stile and ill disposed verse,
Largly relate yᵉ ill disposed vse
Of him yᵗ lies thee to bedeck his hearce:
With much evills then yᵗ may rehearse,
And leave yᵉ rest for circumstance of Evills
To be debated not with men but Divells.
It should not be ascribed to his skill
That thorough his grace he gained estimation,
But yᵗ it plaused to be his Maysters will
To deeme him fitt a pillar for this nation,
And so he was - but in an evil fashion,
His timber sure was rotten at the first,
And so did make his building the accurst.
His deeds are written with an iron penn
In gods black book yᵉ register of greifs,
Sign'd and sealed with ten thousand mon
Whom he hath banisht from their good reliefs,
Leaving their goods to yᵉ spoile of theives.
By his abusive and ungod like actions.
His tricks, his plots, his nurceries of factions.
Monster of men yᵉ worst of any evill
Gods by-marke shun'd by admonition.
His pribie signat sealed for yᵉ Divell,
Spoyler of Orphanes theft to his tuition.

And everis good yt was in his fruition,
willing and wold he what he list commit,
Letting his passion overwhelme his witt.
One work of darknes never be forgotten
That was effected by a murtherous deed,
But let it live till everie one be rotten
That yet is youngest of his race and seede
For which one stroke he cause 2000 weepe,
And everie drop yt from yt number came
Inrohot wrongs, dispaire, and endlesse shame,
On thee and thine. O were thy blood not mixt
Among yo noble honest good, and just,
I should not feare what in my heart is fixt,
Thers dissipations by thy poisned lust.
Flowed downe, and reaped in lascivious lust,
Lacking and matching to vphold thy endes.
With divells, with anie either foes or freinds.
Still did thy envie waite at honours back
Choking desert with overweening pride
And still thy envie shot at honours wrack,
In semblanco still yt vertue was thy guide,
Forcing yo best things to yo worser side.

Thyne eye durst look vpon yᵉ eyes of heaven,
Thy heart was vexed when all things went even.
It is observed in thy generall ends
Thy bad condition in thy best estate,
Thy private treasons to entrap thy freinds,
Thy malice others envie with publick hate
A dangerous pillar in so good a state
Whose over running witt and only excellence
Was envie, hate, and poisoned virulence.
Yᵉ Eyes deemed yᵉ child of reprobation
Brought á new forme of goverment in yᵉ state,
Plotting oᵉ poore for repaire of ye nation,
Forcing their vertues to contempt and hate
Their fortune now was ruled by evil fate;
That they which had yᵉ countries dearest places,
Should so be cheated of their princes graces.
Yᵉ Arcane plotts, and intricate designes
Are now in common with yᵉ vulgar cares,
Now ye nefarious, hellish vnderminers
Are much bemoaned with á world of teares
Just like yᵉ losse of Paris— garden beares.
Who being dowl uncased of their furrs
Lyes bravely buried monget yᵉ brauling curres.

Well, you are gone, it is no matter whether,
For Townes may meet in Suffolk or in Kent,
My charitie doth wish you altogether
That alters honor with so foule intent,
And thus my spirite against you all is bent,
Thinking you worthie of the vilest skorne
That suffred baseneſſe blur in honours horne.

Sir He: Wotton, of happineſſe.

How happie is he borne or taught
That ſerveth not anothers will:
Whoſe armour is his honeſt thought
And ſimple truth his highest ſkill.
Whoſe paſſions not his Maſters are
Whoſe ſoule is prepar'd for death.
Untide to y^e world w^t care
Of princes grace or vulgar breath.
Who hath his life from rumors freed
Whoſe conſcience is his ſtrongeſt ſtay to make
Whoſe ſtate can neither flatterers feede
Nor ruine make oppreſſers great.
Who envies none whome chance doth raiſe
Or vice, who never underſtood

How swoon giues lighter wound then praise
Nor rules of state, but rules of good.
Who God doth late and early pray
More of his grace then wealth to send,
And entertaines the harmelesse day,
With a well chosen booke or friend.
This man is free from seruile bandes
Of hope to rise or feare to fall.
Lord of himselfe, though not of landes,
And having nothing, yet hath all.

A pedigree.

A begger got a bradle,
A bradle got a yeoman,
A yeaman got a prentice
A prentice got a freeman,
A freeman got a master
And he got him a lease,
And it made him a gentleman
And then a justice of peace.
This justice had a daughter,
And forth she came to light.
And vp she came to London,
And how she got a knight,
This knight begott a lord

This lord begot an Earle
This Earle begot a Duke
This Duke it was a Shott,
This Duke begot a prince,
This prince a King of hope,
This King begot an emperour,
And he begot a Pope,
This Pope begot a bastard,
Which was a worthie sparke,
And he lait with a nun, and he begot a Clark,
This Clark begot a Sexton,
This Sexton got a vicar,
This vicar got a parson,
And he begate a Pitcher
This Pichar all wow vpreboards
And they begot a Deane,
And begot a Cardinall,
And he lait with a Queane,
This Queane shee got five shillings,
Five shillings got a smock
This smock it got a Scottish prick,
This prick begot a prok
A mourchant got this go prook,
And put it in a ringe.
And gaue it to a Lady

That gaue it to a King.
Who gaue it to a Queene,
She gaue it to a Duke,
Who gaue it to a waytinge-maide,
That gaue it to a Cooke.
This Cooke he got a Seriant,
This Seriant got a Squirt,
And then it got ~~from~~ some Loshium,
And it begonne to flirt.
This flirt ~~begot a~~ it had a thing,
This thing it was a sonne
And he begatt a Scriveuer.
And so the sport begonne.
This Scriveuer got an Attorny,
And he tooke it in snuffe,
And yet he got a Barister,
And he got him a Ruffe.
This ruff it got good counsaile,
Good councell got a fee,
And then they got a motion,
That might well pleaded bee,
At length it came to judgment,
Though it were some thing long,
And then came to execution,
And so I end my song.

Lady chaind to Venus bowe
Gently guide thy carre of love
Let thy carre but might y day
yt how to make thy carre a waie
Let't bee said you found at last
a xmasse Carrall yt wpayt
plants enough Lenue may inioye
for some are of where none else grew —
some are fet y some are laid
if none stand good morrow maide —

did postea

† from Catherines dock was launched at pinke

Which soone did sloate, but did not sinke

shee lay a while at Essex shoare

Expecting rigging yard and store

from thence disasters to prevent

With winde in poupe shee sailed to kent

At Rochester shee anker Cast

Which Canterbury did distast

But winchester with Elyes helpe

Did hale a shore this syde whelpe

Her ribbs were weake and shee did reele

To some are set to mend her keele

To stopp her leake, and mend her fort

And make her fit for any port

Theis [illegible] Rochester

Beranse before shee was not fitt.

Nor as some sais, shee is nott ygitt.

Although shee be a Carvell built.

And by her poope all over guilt.

for soe shee is in part and whole.

In goods and body mynde and soule. as of

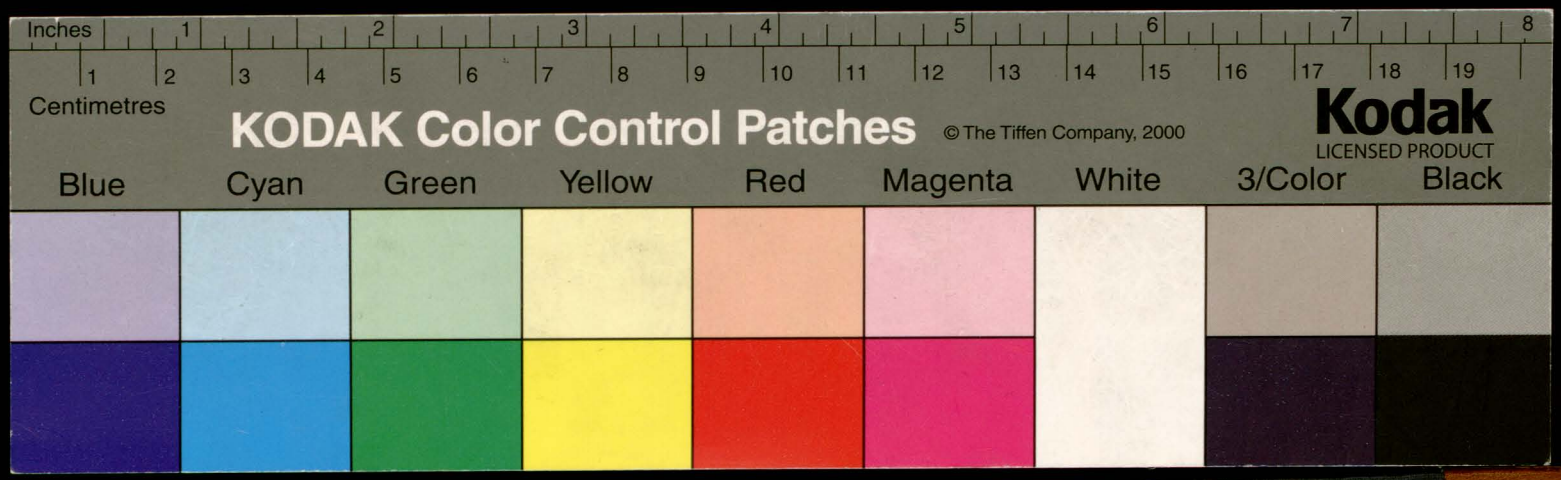
Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

Theis ensuing ~~were~~ were silience the
discouerie of theis poysonings.

A Page, a knight, a Viscount, and an Earle.
In England matchd to a trustye girle.
This match was fitt, for shee was likewise foure.
A wife, a witch, a murtherer, and a whore.

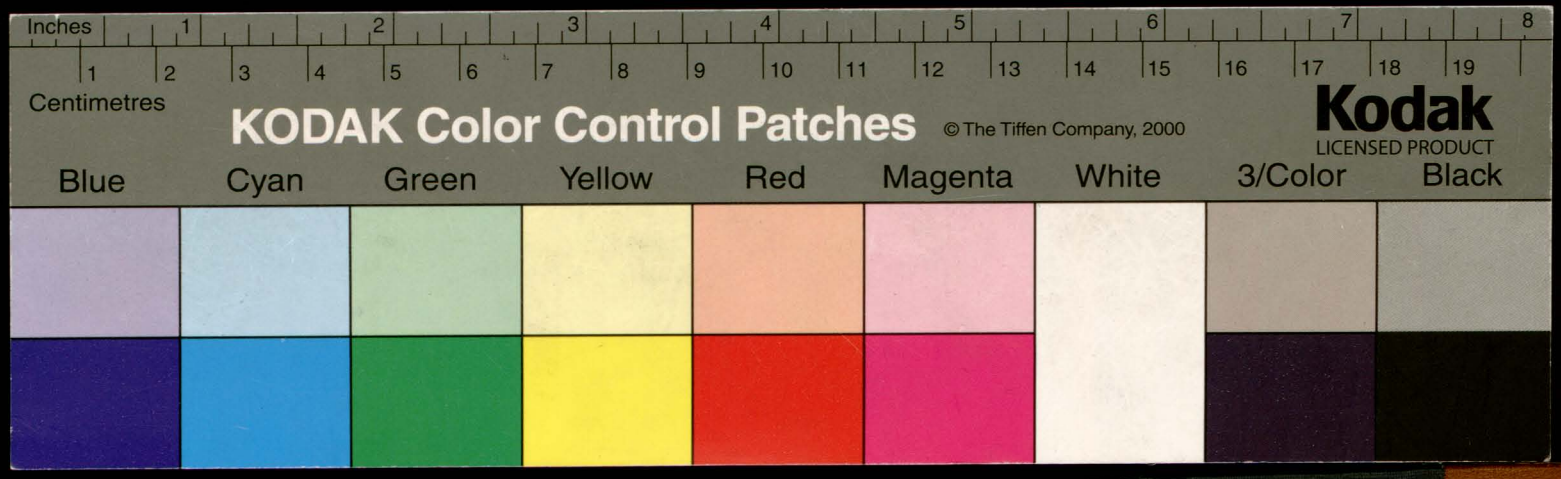
A bird ill hatchd, from out a Cutlowes nest.
flew from her mate, vnto a payes breast.
Inconstant bird, and most vnkindly girle.
To take a page, and leave a worthye Earle.
But nowe her wings are linct, staied w^th her flight.
Within a place wholome blackfriers hight:
for ab att Random, shee noe more must flie.
Vnles ambitiously, shee mount on hie,
Some few Degrees, and soe against her will
A sodaine fall maie thowe the bird to kill.
But nowe her Course, Smith doth ouerlooke.
Till shee Receave her sentence from a Booke.
Whye mortall breathes liberally imparte
To such ab person honeste men with harte.

This bird some saie w^th yong one is growne bigg
Beleeue who list, most hold it but a figg.
But is it growne and shee in Childbed die.
Whoe Joyned others, kills her selfe saie I.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

The pilot or the Pirate thou hast lost thy Pinnace
And by her leake must to thy bottome sinck.
Thy landes are gone alas they were not thine
Thy house likewise another saith is mine:
Then whereas thy wife alas his two yeres dead.
And whereas thy wife another did her wedd.
Art thou a man or but some simple punck.
Clothing thie crone but thie aspiring hart.

Parcky thie house Westmerland thie landes.
Querbery thy wife Essex thie wife Demandes:
Like Aesops Jay each bird will pluck his feather
And leave thee naked exposd to winder weather
yett have thie frendes to keepe thee from the cold
For [illegible] this sunne is seldome to shine noe more.
The cause, thy pride and a lasciviouse whore.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

A. pp new ballett to the tune whyrpe doe mee no harme yoth man or the contrary way whith you plese ab yor voice and he can best agree.

There was an ould lady Lost on an ould pad
Into an old Hunke a wooinge
Her Lord the ould Dunce vppon an ould trunke
Ther was a good ould doinge

There was an ould mayd Starte Swete as they sayde
For a plant that I dare not to mension
She in an odd humor by the a Journy
There was an odd intention

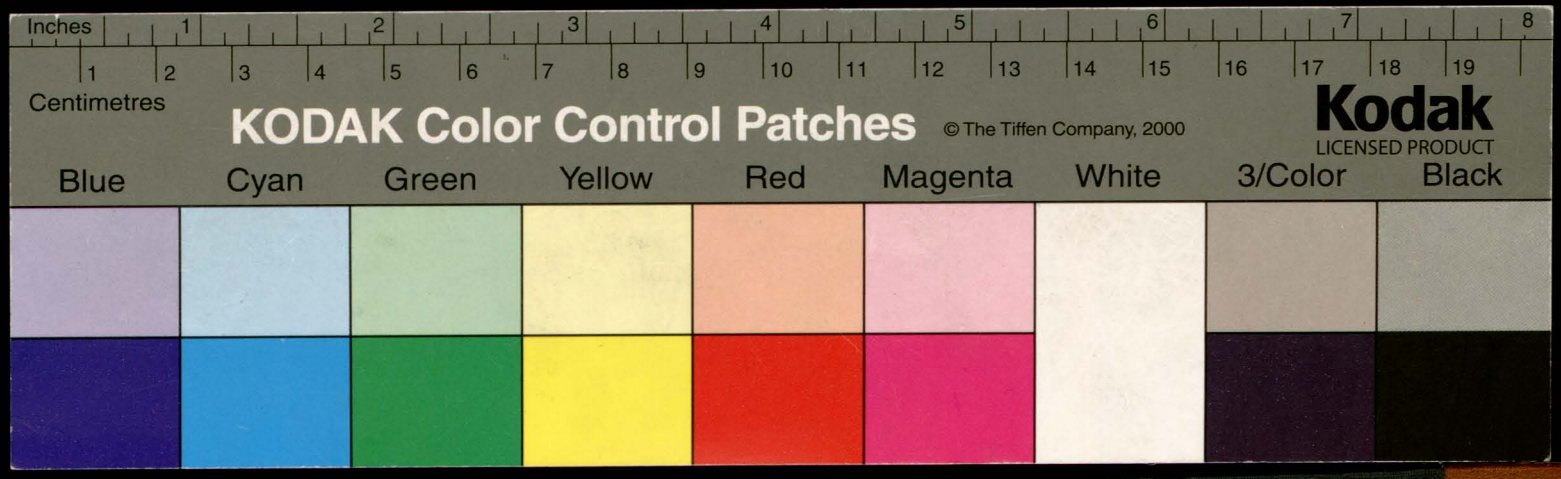
The Dunk and the mayd they Sunge and they sayd
That marriage was a Serbility
If marry you must for Change of lust
Ile tell you a trike of nollity

That was a Madda did study to frame a
Devise to draw yow a purse
She drew itt so narrow a Carr might go through
There was a Slender Shute.

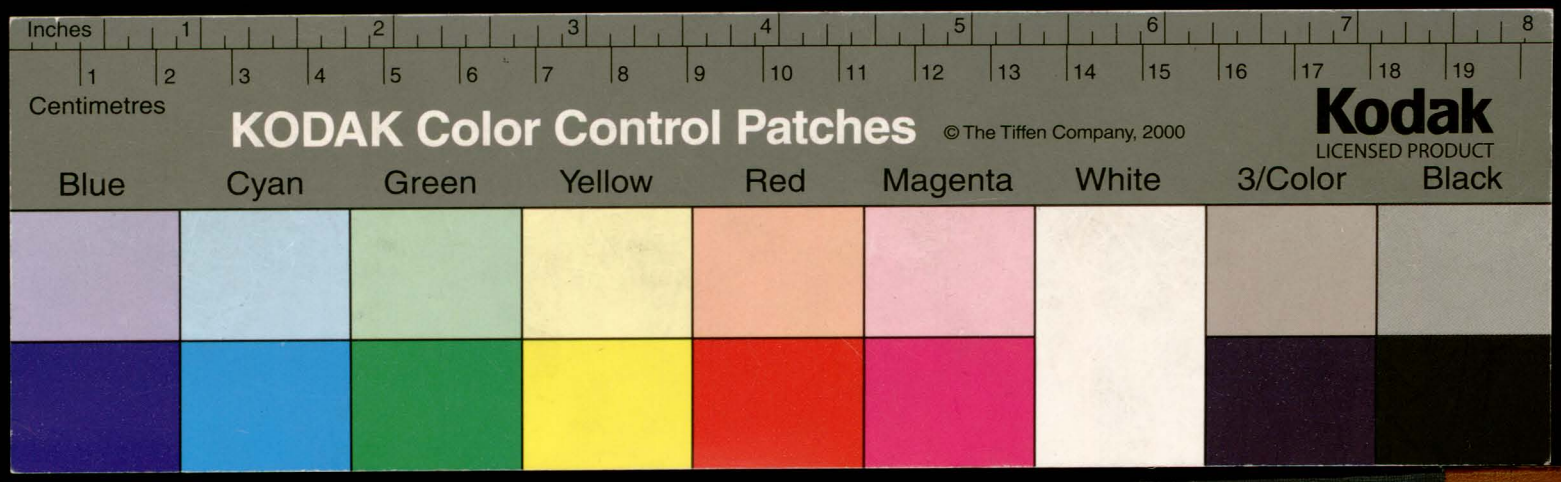
Her Earle did appoint her they say Such a ioincture
He was of no validity

Above twice in a night her tonld her we right
There was a Strange frigidity
But when ab her Earle had an other girle
His wimble tonld pierce her flanke
His muny proued able by Changing his Stable
There was a quo ad hanc.

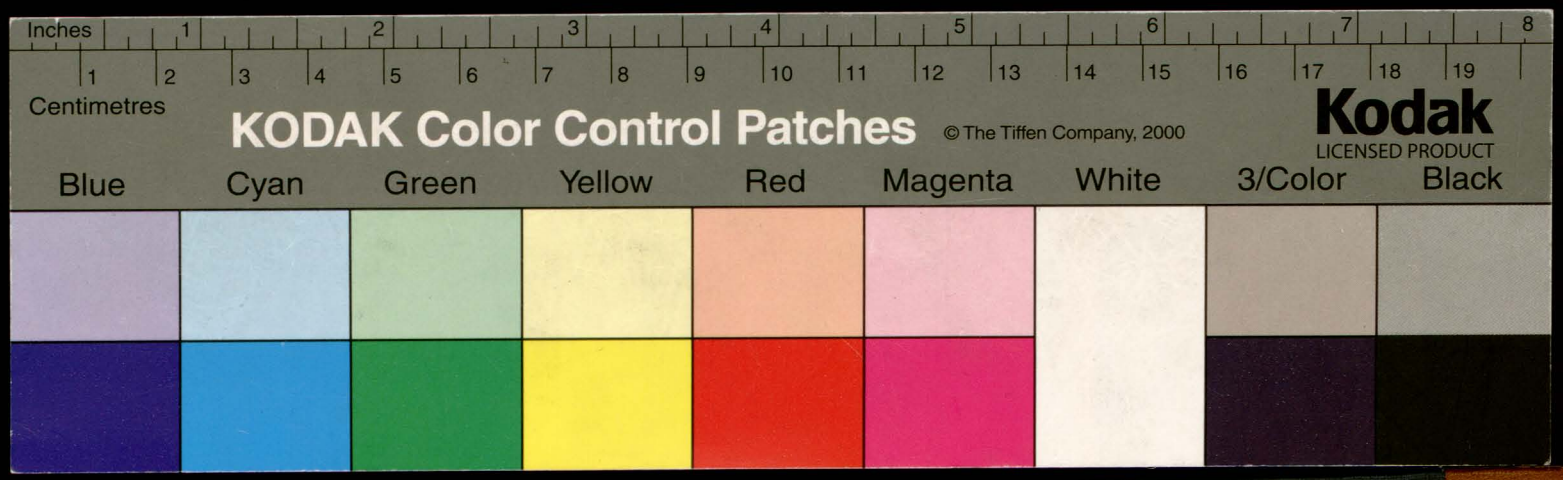
This dame was inspected bull Seand interrieted


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

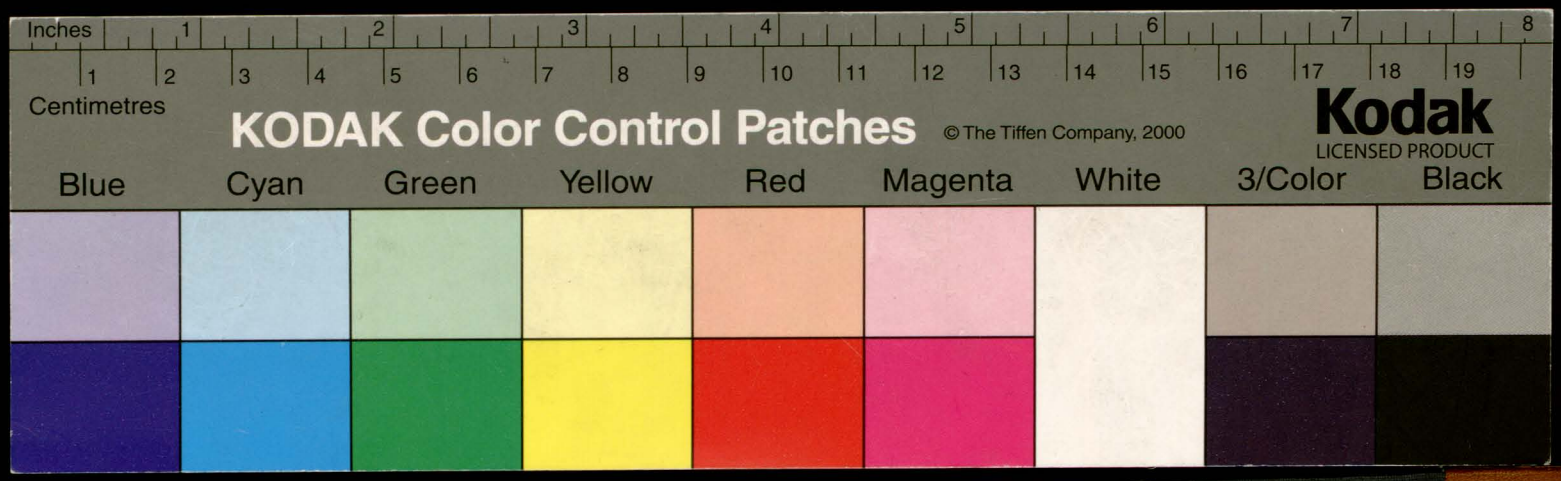
A mayde of more discretion
& tide the Child vnder one handle while the Knight holdeth the handle
There was a Clerke inspection
All contrarie writers Cry out of these matters
That allow this for a virginity
And talke of exception and waste of excision
There was found Divinity
There was a young Lord assumed on his word
Hee would bee a Parliament maker
Hee see how things alter if not scarcely the halter
There was an Undertaker
Hee had a sweete friend that hee did Commend
To the keeping of sweete sir Clerkwell
They Came him a Clister his belly did blister
There was a sweete peece of service
His friends Dyed and Could not abide
A mayde that hir Lady would Shame vp
Betwixt this Matron and this grave patron
A Patterne of Ignorance
Plow west and thorne and turner doe turne
And say that these plotts were framed
They may say their pleasure for thinke ill have measure
Weaned and Hunted and handed
Finis quoth Sir Fidus Knight of the same
Jm Printed in Mankes Church yard all the signe of the yellow
Bande and Ruffe by Adam Islip Robart Roberts and are to be
Sould at the Signe of Anchora Liberata in Turnebull streete


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

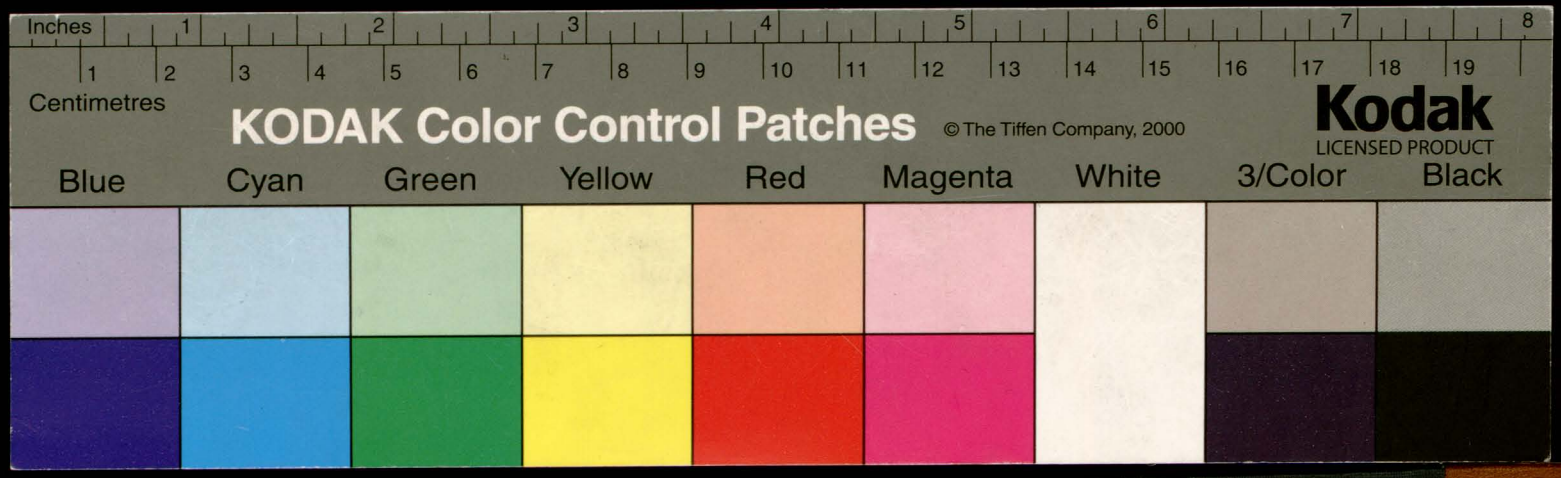
The fayre and famous mayde is gone
And stolne a marryage all alone
Some say that seeme to knowe the truthe
The was ashamed to wedd a youth
for she knewe well what did belonge
Unto a man; clo thyey her wronge
And was Limbes naked to the twiste
I wolde the paynter theare had bine
But now my Lordes noble tellar
Putts downe the hoard in a sellar
Why? you wolde none; yett for her rightes hee
In spight of thos that most do spight her
see how his thinne nose dropped rase noble
What wanted in Crownes in waxed his double
The Irish Come in bagges runnes sweatinge
To this rich weddinge yott by theatinge
This Goodly house and Landes in Kent
All to this dainty wench is ment
And all his suites worke for his darlinge
What thinke you his leane Chapes standinge
But soft: wee Lost the lowly bride
The and her mate to bed are hied
The in her loose vayne gird round
Where must bee Lost what her never found


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

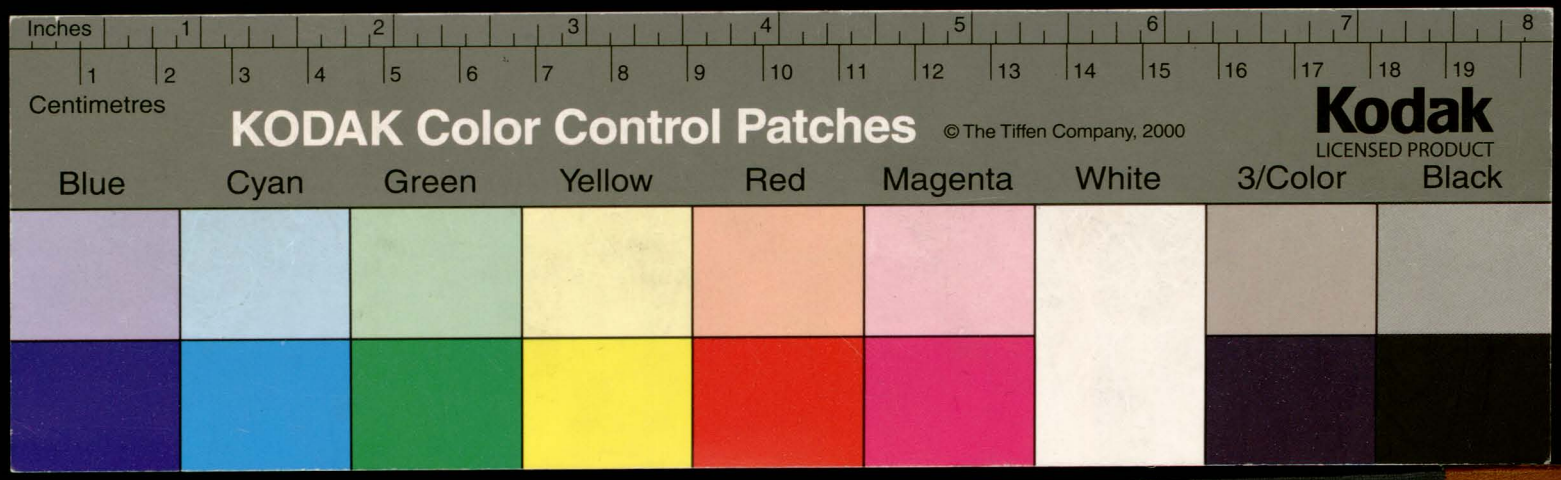
Almost happy bee his Shame for her
Injoyed her now from heed to toe
from Lippeshippe from toe to toe
And that with her sound woman wide
full fruitfull glee the Ghetther grandome
To bring a Dome thouth gott all randome
And glory youth that hast prevailed
Since many mist that were thinyfre
And when thow art almost, her tramy
Wish well to Walson and trehany


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

From Calleins darke shee Lamuht a party Joinke
Leake shee did often but did never sinke.
In fallinge downe to Essex pleasant shore
Long shee expected riggings And yards store
But out of hope there to obtaine Content
With winde in poope away shee flings for kent
And faine shee wouto at Rochester Cast anker
But hidden danger & chill feares mith blanket her
Before to crosse good Canterburies house
And Londons too did Crosse y^e Straniawe
Yet Winchester entred shee might, and Ely
By striptum est wonto prone it, did not he lye
Well where shee wontobe, they twotuy y^e ther
Manger y^e Sea, y^e tyde, y^e winde, the weather
Then Somarsett to caulke & fresh her breake
Make yare her geare, new yard her stayes Cleate
And bravely furnisht now with all munition
To sea shee goes upon an expedition
Her Canuas spreading when shee was unbinde Cle
Vp shee wonto fetch whome shee had a mine Cle
Clayphim aboard take the best things shee had
& in exchange gine him some ordinarie bad
Many a gallant top fore yard mast.
Her winde in wonte lays in helples wast.
And now her will commandes to cut shee prase
Without controule remoue all the staies


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

In triumph thus shee rested till debate
Arose betweene her wks And his mate
The Pinke was tender sided And unsteady:
Ill suits gust to turne her keele by ready:
The mate listninge that did soone distast her =
His thoughts her faultes disseuers to th wks.
fore warninge him such tempests were A brewinge,
Ys not to leaue her brought apparent ruine
The wks wholy on his Pinke in ammorted
Into his head could have no Counsell hammered
Still he would keepe her like her loue her best
But doth in hart his honest Mate detest
Consulls wth his beloued A fitt tyme watches
When by A Creeke they clap him vnder hatches
Where fed wth Arte-composed Cart hee laye
fitt at a port hole he was made a way
And Interburied head and eares in water
Pitty yt shee shonld cause so foule A slaughter.
His treacherous practise neptune winnowed out
And proued Just vengance al the seas A bout
The grudging windes wth angry murmur swell
And sad disasters in black stormes foretell
Nor rest, no refuge the proude pink Could haue
Tossed, tumbled, rumbled on the boistrous waue
Her sides, her sayles prevaile not nor her prayers


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

Yᵉ shᵉ wasᵈ Cast at the blak friers stairs
Where in requitall of her former iadeing
Yanckt and rifled made and barrd from trading
On ground shee sitts: and though shee yet shee splitts not
Crackt and halfe wrackt for sea agene shee sitts not
Nay though her owners safely shoud to winne her
off
No man Mine woud ever venture in her
But deare ^ her Nᵉ close vnto A Mountaine
Wasᵈ ormen Shore nigh Ignorannᵒ fountaine
from whence the stormes Increasing fury stroke hᵐ
Downe to A Moore: Where now you may get loot
Chin

Pulchra mea (nec enim no dulcis) flamma medull
sten nescis meas es quantu Amaryllis amo

non ego mirarer Stygia si forsitan aula
Romulus obtt clauiger esse Petrus.
Innumeris etenim ditant mandata umbras
et referat Stygias ingredientq fores
sed miror q cu spatijs sic distet utrq
possit et aetherei clauiger esse poli.
sed neq ia miror: cali na claudere possan
D Fletcher — trista obsit: Stygias sed reserare fores

Plumpen apud tristes nullum est: quid pontius illis
est opq? aut quid opus denig pontifice?
est apud infernos cu tot sint flumina, soli
ipsi habeant portes pontificesq suos.

Heere lyes Fowle, deny it who can
y^t slewe a false woman yet dyde a true man.
One tricke shee had to set forth her cunning,
while one Legge stood still, the other was running.

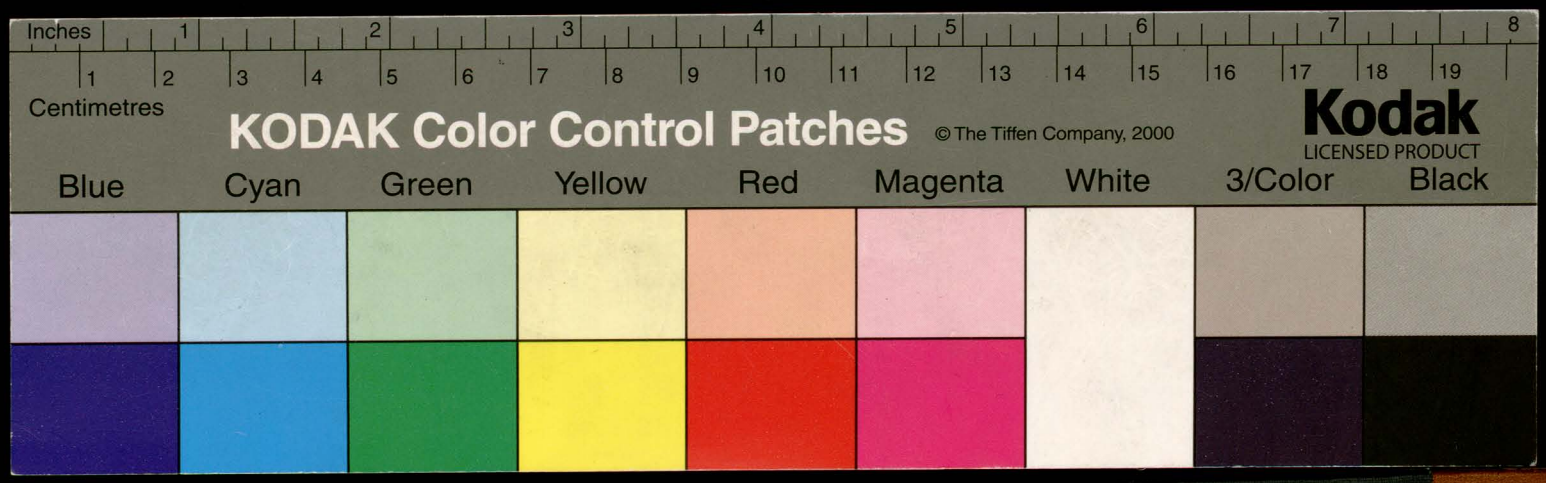
The starre y^t rose in Virgo's traine
from south to north did post amaine.
if southward ore the coast of Spaine
thou northren Charles looke to thy waine.

Bella inter gemin̄os plus̄q̄ ciuilia fatures
~~Traxerat~~ ambigu̅ religionis apex.
Ille reformate fidei pro ptio̅ instat,
~~Iste~~ reformanda denegat esse fide.
Propositis ~~fidei~~ causis rationib̄ alter-vtriq̄
Concurrere pares et cecidere pares.
O nod fuit in ~~fatis~~ fratr̄ capit alter vtrumq̄
O nod fuit in votis perdit vterq̄ fidē.
Captiui gemini sine captiuante trahuntur,
Et victi victi transfuga castra petit.
O nod genus hoc pugnæ est, vbi victus gaudet
Et tamē alterutr̄ se superasse dolet?

Betweene 2 brothers ciuill warre & worse
The nick point of religion long did nurse:
For reformation of the faith ~~or~~ that plyes,
That faith should bee reformed this ieneyes.
The reasons off the cause apart propounded,
Both met alik, alik were both confounded.
As heart could wish each brother other faieth
As fates would have it each his faith forsaketh.
Without captiuer both are captiues led
To the victor camp the vanquisht fled
What fight is this where ~~victor~~ conquered both are sad
yet either to have conquered other glad.

J. L. B.

coanquipt campe the victor fled


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

Buckingamus, Jo, maris est prefectus et idem
Qui dominatur equis nunc dominatur aquis.
Sic inter superos liquidas qui temperat undas
Neptunus celeres et moderatur equos.
Et nunc displiciat cuiquam geminata potestas
Exemplum superis cum placuisse vides!

Jo to Buckingam great Admiral,
Jo to Buckingam the man
That rules the horse, now rules the Ocean.
Nor is it fitt, but her that rules the deepes
Should raigne and checke the foaminge steedes she keepe.
Nor let this doubled power cloud any browe,
Since the hir powers this presidnt allowe.

The farewell to Sack

ffarwell thy liquor time past so knowne, so deare
to men, as blood to life, and spirit neare,
May then more neare then kindred, friend, man, wife,
make to thy female, soule and bodie life
to quicke action; or thy reserved spright
of the refyning, yet refyning bryde.
The kisse of virgins, first fruits of the bed
sweet spretes, sweet tome, the hymes the maidenhead
these and a thousand sweets, could never bee
so neere and deare, as then wast once to mee.
O then thy drinke of Gods and Angells wyne
that fattenest spirits and lust; whose pretie shine
more radiant then the sunnes faire beames showes
earle, most illustrious, brane, and like to those
Cometts wee see by night; whose shagge portents
foreshewe the coming of some dyre events,
or some full flame, whose wide a prid aspect
throwing abroad his raies and wavering fires.
O thou blood Nectar, o diviner soule
eternall in thy selfe, that canst controule
that w^ch subverts, whole Nature, greife & care,
vexation of the mynde, and dumb dispaire
tis then alone wch with thy Mistike fume
workst more then wisdome, Arte, or Natures rare,
to rouse the lyly madnesse; and awake
the frost-bownd blood and spirits, and to make
them frantike with thy raptures, striking through
the soule like lightning, and wth arte too.
Tis not Apollo can, nor those trinle three
Castalian sistered singe, if wanting thee.
Horace, Anacreon, both had lost their fame
hadst thou not fild them wth thy fire & flame.
Phabean splendor, and the Thespian springe
of whose sweete Swans must drinke before they singe
their verse past numbers, and their sacred layes
wch make them worthy Readers and the Bayes.
But why, why longer doe I gaze upon
thee, with the eye of Adoration?
sure I must leave thee, and inforst must say
to lyfe thy witching beauties goe away
but they wimpering looked doe aske me why?
then knowe that Nature bids thee goe not I;
tis her decreame selfe hath forgd a brayne
unvayable of sins a sonteraigne
as his thy powerfull selfe, prithee drawe in

thy glaring fires, least in their fight they sinn
of fierce Idolatry, shoote into mee, and
Thorne Apostate to thy strict command
of Matrone, bid mee now farewell, or smile
more coly, least thy tempting looks beguile
my powers, determist in scale, we three must sheare thee
but I can sworne but by thy looks to knowe &c;
left others drinke thee, and with mayne desire
thee and their lipps thy sponse, while I admyre
and love thee, not not last thee, left my Muse
faile of thy former fehed, and only use
for in adulterate strengths, what's done by mee
hereafter, shall smell of thy lampe, not thee.

R: Herricke

The Welcome againe

So soft streames meete, so springe to gladder smiles
meete after longe dimorcement by the Isles,
when lone the child of likenesse begetts on
their Christall natures to an Union.
So meete stolne kisses, when the moony night
call forth fierce lovers to their wisht delights;
So kings and Queenes meete, when desire renowned
all thoughts but sinn art ayme at getting Princes;
As I meete thee, sonle of my life and fame,
eternall Lampe of love, whose radiant flame
out-starrs the beames, Osiris, and thy gleames
dash forth the splendor of his midday beames.
Welcome, o welcome my illustrous sponse
welcome as it the end unto mee vowes:
nay farr more welcome then the lappy soile
the sea-storm'd Marchant after all his toile
salutes with teares of joy, when Tyrrel display
the smoaking chimneys of his Ithaca.
Where last thou beene thus longe from my imbraces
poore pittied exile, tell mee did thy graces
thy disronted Isenate? and for a time
die rather choose to blisse an other clyme?
Or wast it to that end thou meanest to mone mee
more by thy absence, to desire and love thee?

why frownst my sweete? why doest my saint detein
her bosome smiles from mee her worshiper?
why are those Cassie lockes, that wont late bin
time past so fragrant, sirtly, now drawne in
like a dull twilight? tell mee has thou lone
prophan'd in sport? or done an act more lone
against thy mates nature? for that fault
ile expiate with sulphure laine and salt
and with the christall tenor of the springe
purge lenne the guilt, and kill the quarrelling.
Wilt thou, not smile, or tell mee what amisse?
Lane I bene told to trugge thee? too remisse
too temperate in imbracinge? has desire
to thy ward died in thembers, and no fire
left in this vaste but ashe cape, as a marke
to testifie the glowing of a spark:
Lane I devorst thee only to combyne
or quench my lust upon some other wyne?
trust I confesse, I left thee and appeale
twas done by mee more to confirme my zeale
and double my affection, as doe those
whose love growes more enflam'd by being foes,
but to forsake thee ever could there bee
a thought of soe like possibilitie?
when thou thy selfe darst say thy vowes should varie
praysed before Herricke leanes Canary sacke.
Thou art my life, my lenen, salt to all
my dearer dayntie, nantill, primivall
fire to all my functions, quest mee blood
thyne, spirit, and marrowe e vogat els is good:
Thou makst mee ayrie, active to be borne
like Ephiclus upon the topps of corne,
and makst mee winged, as the nymble gnatt
to dance and rayse on the spades of flowers;
and ride the sunbeames, can there be a thinge
under the heavenly Iris that can bringe
more love unto my life? or can present
my Genius with a fuller blandishment?
Illustrious Idoll can the Egyptian seeke
helpe from the garlike, onyon e the leeke
and pay no vowes to thee? why ward their best
God, and fayr more transcendent then the rest,

C

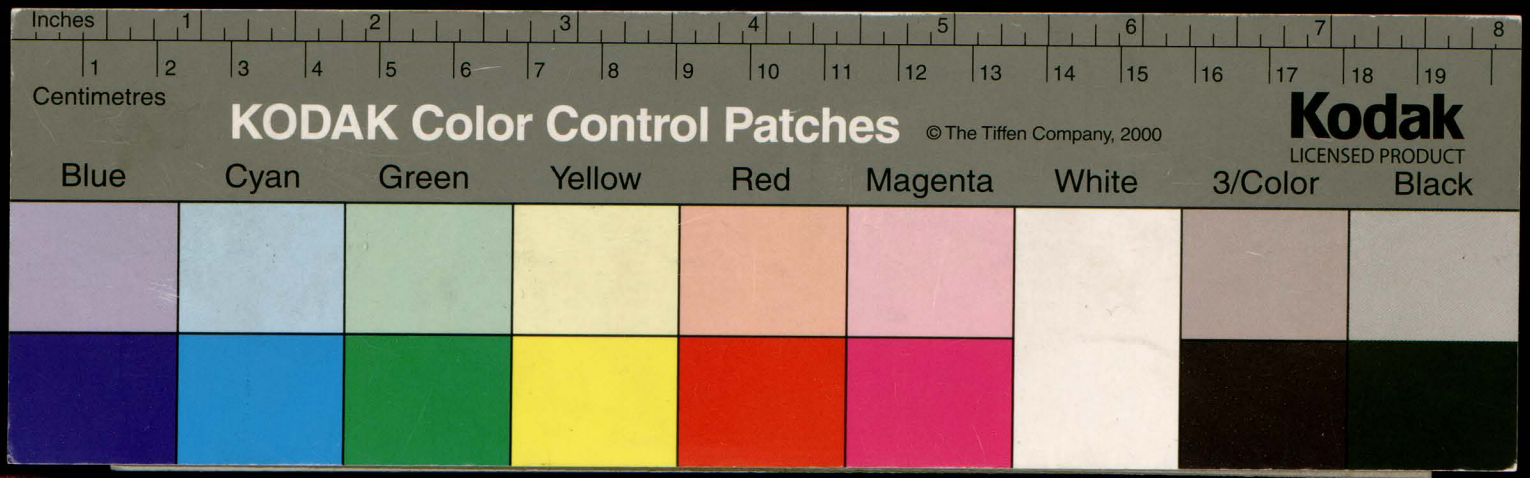
Had Cassius that weake water drinker knowne
these my veines, had he but tasted one
smale Cubite of they purer Nectar blee
as the wise Cato that approved of thee.
And had not Joues sonne that past Tyrinthian swayne
invited to the Thessian banquette came
full gobletts of thy blonde, his sociall spright
nere had text seat for fifte maides that night
dome rome and bisenes, seate of lust commend
thee and thy beauties; kisse and nestle be friends
too stronge for fate to breake vs, looke vpon
mee, with that full price of complexion
as Queenes see Queenes, or some thou vnto mee
as Cleopatra made to Antony,
when her liege bisaye did at once present,
to the Triumpher lone and wonderment.
Smell by my nerues, my spiritt, lett my blood
runne through my vaynes like to a lusty flood,
fill each part full of fire, vntime to doe
what they commandment selfe shall vnto it too:
and like a traitor Apostate to they lone
when I am powre to serue, doe not remone
they frend from mee, but lett Apollos curse
blast all my actions, or a thing that worse;
when these circumstances can power to see
the time, that I prevarricate from thee,
shall mee the sonne of beene, and thee confine
mee to the tauy; the tost, the turfe, lett wyne
neere shine vpon mee, lett my senses kill.
Last to a suddaine death and funerall.
And last deare spouse when I thee disavowe
nere may I Prophetike Daphne crowne my browe.

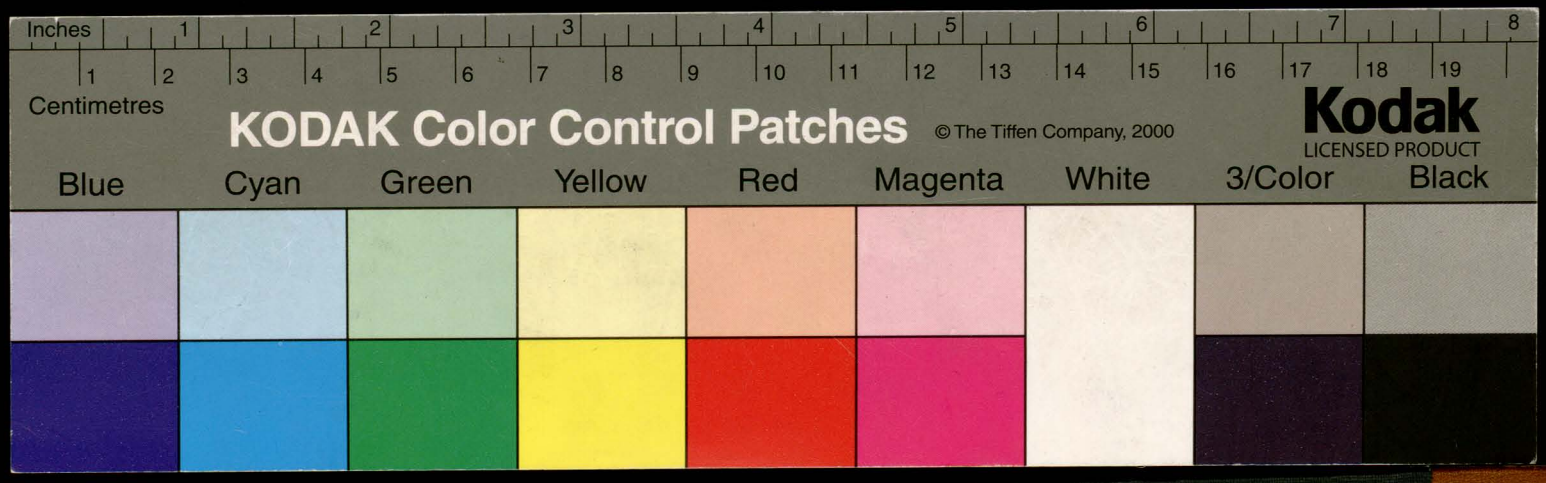
finis.

Deuant si je puis

Of Sultan Zolyman

By the Grace of God mightie & vnconquerable Turkish Emperour I sweare by the highest, almightiest, and vlmightie God I sweare by his kingdome, by the substance of the heauens by the Sunne and Moone and the starres, by the earth and all vnder the earth, by the braines and liuyng soule of my mother by my beard and all the strength of my bodie and bodie, by the holy great Mahomet, by Euzam, Jozzeta, Virema, and all Buzerman, and by my circumcision. That I the sayd my brother and sonne Bethelem Gabor succeeding king of Hungarie in no manner of way will leaue in the great & mighty affe whome it bee to the ouerthrowe of my kingdome to be bro to nothing, vntill there be no more liefe but my selfe and or 5. Turkes more vt the most; yet I will bee still obli to defend thee, and all those that doe any way appertain to thee: And if thou shalt haue any neede of mee, I will alwayes readie to goe with thee; And in case this my promise shall in any way be frustrated, then let God's iustice fall vpon my head, and destroy mee and my Posteritie, and wipe away whatsoeuer belonged to and gather it together into a rocke of stone, or substan of earth; and that the earth may cleaue a sunder, and drinke and swallowe mee vp bodye and soule. Date at Constantinople 3° Jnny 1620.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

What is o^{r} life, o^{r} á play of passion,
our mirthes, the musicke of division.
o^{r} mothers wombes, the tiring places bee,
Where wee are drest, for lifes short comedie.
The graues yt hides vs from the scorching sonn,
Are like drawne curtaines, when yᵗ play is donne,
Thus playing cunne wee to o^{r} Lord rest,
whereas wee dye in earnest, not in gest.

Gs.

Huge Mars, and mightie Pallas come help me to remember
The noble acts, and worthy facts, preformed in November,
By Barristers stoute, and sturdie, yong gentlemen so proper,
Who marcht in hose, as some suppose, bedaubed with lace of copper,
This project was mr̃uted, because their purse was shallowe
Cured by á prince, á subjects sister, y^{t} means the old princes sarvallowe
Confirmed by all the Benchers, sprucc old men, wise, and witties,
By á tricke of Law, not worth á straw, to cousin court, and cities.
Bid vnderstanding blinde you, or eyes sight (doating asses)
T imagine o^{r}, as dimme as yᵗ yᵗ eyes yᵗ looke through glasses?
But happie was this project, thrice happy was this Monday,
For Hemmings old, and Burbige bold, Nat Field, and Henry Condaye.

for affection

1. Retorst two Jewels, such as shee,
And that deare Love I beare her
If any odds of worth may bee
Affection is the dearer

2. ffor though shee in myne eies seeme
ffrom all hir Sex both wyse and
I cannot see, nor can shee seeme
wth out me, as wth in mee.

3. Though shee's most fayre, yett smile ye deare
Desire, that makes mee Love her
Could think her more, if less shee were,
My thoughts mee please above her

4. Hir face the Sphear is of my sight,
My hart hir worth's pauillion,
Two eyes find her but one delight,
One hart makes her a million

5. As thirst is in beholding streames
Much pleased, but more in drinking:
Shee are nee thoughts soe sweet as dreames,
Nee sights soe sweet as thinking

Yo^r Love to thy
yo^r Mistris
The last, when yo
And soe yo

The question is, whither affection to his Mistris
or thee hirself gives a man most delight.
for his person.

1. Twixt Gomez soe pretious as the Lass
And my affection to hir
If in delight eeuch other pass,
'tis Thee, because I woo hir

2. Thee could not seeme, nor could yo^u. see
W.^th. in yo^u., as thee merritts
Had not yo^r. eyes, first veiwd w.^th. glee
The beauties thee inherritts.

3. Though yo^r. desire makes hir to seeme
Much fayrer then hir face is.
In y^t. desire yo^u. cease I deeme
Both hir, and all hir graces

4. Why fancieth yo^r. longing hart
Ten thousand ioyes vnto yo^u.?
But y^t. tis thee, that can impart
Sweetes, which Lockt vp vnto yo^u.

5. No dropp doth more aswage my drought
Then sight of riuers streaming
My Loue, and Mistris I neere thought
Ies pleasant then my dreaming

yo^u. simbolize
Riuer
yo^u. better prize
yo^u. giue hir.

The more I vse my deare pursuits,
The more I her desire.
To reape the fruits of hir sweetnes
Is fuell to my fyre.

Injoying her I doubly gayne;
Sweete thoughts, hir sight deare cases,
Shee absent I chill comfort trayne;
Present, I both embraces.

Shee in myne armes as fruitfull fields
Rich plenties doe encrease,
Vnto my late vext spirit yeilds
Vnvtterd iyes and peace.

Tellus is sowen by country swaynes
With hope that Autumes roare
And that Cares will stuffe with grayne
His barnes to make good chearе.

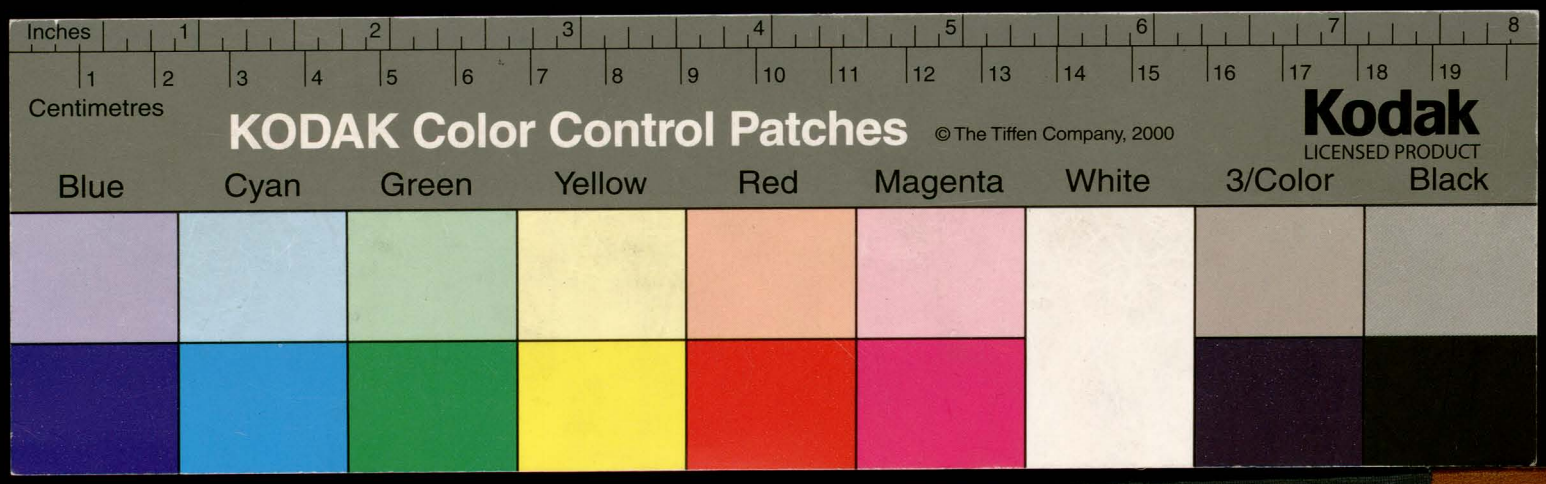
If man nere clasper his bould Desire
yet doth hir Lawe pursue,
Like Tantalus his foode is neere,
His feast is fasting true.

Why may not him a picture pleasure
In absence bee his pleasure
He doth an emptie coffer soaze
whilst I possess the Treasure

Love is the seede, my youth doth sowe,
Desire calls Harvest on,
My mistris is the Croppe, I know
Affection feedes vpon

Injoying is the fruit of love
Hope to obtaine doth nurse it
Else cayne doth yor affection prove
Repenting thoughts will curse it

As Phebus fervent beames doe scorch
Swete rayne refreshing giues
So Cupid burnes me wth his torch,
But Venus mee relieues /


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

James. By the grace of god of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland kinge, defender of the fayth &c. to all to whome these presents lettres shall come, greetinge. Whereas very Lately speeches have bin held betweene certaine of ours, and of o^r most deere brother the kinge of Spaines ministers: that the better to strengthen and establish that freindshipp w^ch betweene vs begone immediatly from the Crowne of England hath bin confirmed by vs, Counsell might be held touchinge (and god favouringe) prefixinge a marriage betweene our most deere sonne Charles Prince of great Brittaine, and the Infanta, Lady Anne second daughter of the sayd kinge of Spaine, whereunto both of vs have given o^r eare, so that now there is a greate hope the same to take effect to the common desire and benefitt of either partie. if it bee handled by fitt men, and persons prepared on both sides with sufficient authoritie for that worke. Know yea that wee for that fayth, and trust w^ch wee have had in the wisdome, industry, and experience of o^r trustie freind and well beloued S^r John Digby knight, and Vice Chamberlaine, and one of o^r privie Councell, and late ordinarie Leiger to vs with the sayd kinge of Spaine, wee do constitute, and ordaine him our undoubted Commissary, Deputy, Procurator, and deputie for the same, and by these presents do give vnto him full power, authority, and commission generall, and speciall in o^r name, ~~and~~ as also in ~~the~~ the name of o^r most deere sonne Charles

prince of great Britaine, both with the most excellent
the kinge of Spaine our deare brother and Cosin, as
well in his name, as in the name and steede of the most
excellent and famous princes the Lady Mary, second
daughter of the said kinge of Spaine, and their procura-
dors, deputyes, and messengers, haueinge thereunto sufficient
authoritie ~~and Commission generall and Speciall~~ to com-
municate, appointe, and finally to conclude vp and vppon
the espousall by woordes of time to come, and of present
by woordes of time present betweene the said most
deare Sonne Charles prince of great Britaine,
and the said Infante La: Mary second daughter
of the said Kinge of Spaine, as in ~~fitt~~ times, and
~~of~~ right it may be done best, fittest, most conuenient
and conuenient, and also to treate Couents, and conclude
of, and vppon ~~the~~ the dower and dowers and gifts
for the same marriage or joynture, by reason
of the marriage and quantitie, and sume of money
and time, and times, ~~and~~ manners, formes conditions
assurances, and penalties, for the same dowre, dow-
and gifts for marryage to vs, and the said prince
Sonne his heires, and Successors, by the most excellent
the kinge of Spaine our deare brother and Cosin
heires, and assignes to be payd, to assigne, to appoint
and limit, and moreouer to appoint and conclude of
for and vppon all, and singuler other thinges,

Concerninge the premisses, or any of them, and there vppon
to make letters, and instrumentes, and to take and require the
like of the other partie, and to doe, and finish all other
thinges wch to the premisses or any of them shall bee
necessary, or any thinge fittinge as though they would
require our speciall commandmentes, thereunto promisinge
faythfully on o[r] knighly word, that wee will hold,
and ratifie all that shall bee done by o[r] sayd Procutor
and Commissary in the premisses or any of them,
as allowed, acceptable, and firme, and also that wee will
take care that those thinges wch one the partie of
o[r] deare Sonne Charles shall be agreed, may be fully
and duly fulfilled. In witnes whereof to make these
o[r] letters signed wth o[r] hand, wee have putt o[r] greate
Seale the xvj[th] of April. 1617.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

The proceedings wch happened touching the Divorce, betweene the Lady Frances Howard and Robert Earle of essex.

The Ladie Francis Howard, before the kinges (Delegates) George Cantuar: John: London, Lauric: Ely, Rich: Litchfield and Coventry, Dcor, Cæsar: Thom: Parry: Dan: Dunn, Jo: Bennet Fra: James: & Thom: Edwards. authorized under the kings broad seale. xlt in January. 1613.

That she and Robt earle of essex were married by publique rites & Ceremonies of the Church. in January. 1613.

That she at that time was fully. 13. yeares old, and at this time is 22. or. 23.

That the foresaid Robt: at the time of the pretended marriage was about. 14: & is about 22 or 23. at this time, at that time & ever since, & this present is a man (as farre forth as a man may judge) and hath beene in good health and perfect estate of body, not any way hindered by any Ague or sickness, but that hee might have carnall copulation wth a woman.

That since the pretended marriage, at least by the space of whole & continued 3. yeares, after the said Robt had fully attained the age of 18. yeares (as time & place did serve, & after the manner of other married folkes) the said Francis Howard in hope of lawfull issue & desirous to bee made a mother, Layd together wth the said Robt at bedd & Board & lay both naked Toyning in the same bedd (as married folke use & desirous to bee made a mother from time to time, againe & againe, yielded her selfe to his

Power and as much as Lay in her, offered her selfe & her body to be knowne and earnestly desired Communication & Copulation And also the same Earle in the same time very often againe & againe did tye to have copulatio as wth his Lawfull wife wch she refused not but used the meanes shee could, not wthstanding all this the said Earle could never knowe her carnally, nor have that copulatiō (in any sort) wch the married bed alloweth yet before the said pretended marriage & since the said Earle hath had & hath power & ability of body to deale wth other women & know them carnally & sometimes hath felt the motions & pricks of the flesh carnally, and tending to carnall copulation, as he saieth & beleeveth, & adventure by a perpetuall & naturall impediment hath beene hindred all the former time, & is at this present, that hee can have no copulation, wth the said Lady Frances/

Further more, the said Lady Frances hath beene & is verie fitt & able to have copulation wth a man & such an one as may be carnally knowne; neither hath in this regard any impediment

Moreover the said Lady Frances remayneth and is at this day a virgin; also at the time of the pretended mariage the said Lady Frances was vnacquainted with the said Earles want of ability & impediment formerly mencioned

And further more the said Earle long before this suit comenced very often, & at sundry times, confessed in good earnest

Before witnesses of good credit & his seruants & kinsfolkes, that although hee did his best endeauour, yet hee could neuer nor at any time can haue copulation wth the said Lady Frances, no not once.

And Lastly in regard of womanish modesty the said Lady Frances hath concealed the former matters, & had a purpose to conceale it if shee had not beene forced through false rumors of disobedience to the same Earle, to reueale them

Shee requireth since this pretended matrimony, is but a fact & not in right it may be pronounced, declared & iudged, as none, of none effect, & shee may be quitt & free from all knotts & bond of the same by your sentence & authoritie.

The Earle of Essex replyeth
to 6. Junij. 1614.

To The first. & second he answereth affirmatiuely.

To the 3. he thinketh, that at the tyme of his marriage, hee was fully 14 yeares & is now 22. & vpwards, neither since had, or hath any sickness, or impediment to hinder him, but that hee might haue had copulatio of a woman, sauing in the time of his sickness of the small pox 2. or 3. yeares after the said marriage wch continued for a moneth or 6 weekes, & at an other time when hee had a few fitts of an Ague.

To the first hee affirmeth, that for one yeare hee dwas not attempted, that the other 2. yeares hee did lye in bed most commonly wth her, but felt no motion, or prouocatio, & therefore not attempted, the first yeare, when he was willinge shee shewed her self sometimes willing but other times refused

The 5. he answereth that hee never carnally knew her, but found not any defect in himselfe, yet was not able to consummate in her wombe, nor enjoy her.

To the 6. hee beleeveth that before & after the marriage, he hath found an ability of body, to know any other woman, & hath often times felt motions & provocations of the flesh, tending to carnall copulation, but for impediments hee knoweth not what the words meane but that he hath layen by the Lady Frances, two or three years past, & had no motion to know her, & hee beleeveth shee never shall.

To the 7. he beleeveth not that the said Lady Frances is a woman apt & fit for carnall copulation, because hee hath not found it.

To the 8. & 9. he beleeveth them both to bee true, & thinketh that once before some witnesses of Credit hee did speake to this purpose, that hee oftentimes had endeavoured carnally to know her but could not.

The Lord Archbishops
his speach to his Matie.

In asmuch as wee firmely beleeve that the Scriptures directly or by consequence doe directly contein in them sufficient matter to decide all Controversies (especially in things appertaining to the Church) and that marriage among christians, can be no lesse accompted then a Sacred thing as being instituted of God himselfe in Paradise, honoured by the presence of our Saviour himselfe, declared by S. Paul to be a signe of the spirituall communicacon betweene Christ and his Church /

I would bee glad to know by what text of scripture either by threold or by the new Testam. a man may haue a nullitie of a marriage solemnely celebrated. propter Maleficium versus hanc.

Wch I doe the rather aske because I find warrant expressly in scriptures to make a nullitie of marriage propter frigiditate, by the words of our Saviour: Matth: 19: ver. 22. for there bee some chast or Eunuches, wch are soe borne of there mothers belly, & there bee some wch bee made chast of men, and there be some wch haue made themselues chast, for the kingdom of heauen.

I would also know gladly, what ancient father amongst the Greekes or Latines, by occasion of interpretation of scripture, or any disputation hath mentioned Maleficiu versus hanc?

The like I demaund touching auncient counsells either generall or prouinciall & concerning stories ecclesiasticall whether any such matter be to be found in them?

If (for ought that appeareth) never mention was made of this, till Arcadius Rhemensis his time tempus. who lived 400. yeares after Christ? it may well be conceiued, that this was a concomitant of darknesse, & popish superstition, wch about that time grew to so great a height (god permitting then that punishmt. might fall vpon the children of vnbelife.

But since the light of the Gospell is now in soe great a measure broken forth againe why should I not hope that those who haue embraced the Gospell should bee free from this maleficium, especially since amongst a million of men in our age, there is not one found in all our countries who is clearly & euidently known to be vexed with this same

And if there should be any, wch should seeme to be molest
wee are taught to vse two remedies, the one Spirituall
physick, the other Eternall.

For the first. Ds Samus. said. Hoc genus Damoniorū nō ejicit
nisi p̄oratiōe et jejunio, and Saint Peter: speaking of the
Diuell. Cui resistite fortes in fide: & the Canonistes themselues
p̄scribe Almes, fasting & prayers to be vsed in that
case: but that they ioyne supplication, & their exorisme
there vnto, & for corporall medicine to applyed therewith
as against a disease, so is the judgmt of our late diuines, whe
ex they speake of maleficium or not.

Nor admitt the Earle of Essex might be imagined to be
troubled wth maleficium versus hanc. I demaund what
Almes haue beene giuen? what fasting hath beene vsed
and what prayers haue bine powred forthe? to suppresse
the wroth of God towards him or his wife? or what
physick hath bene taken? or medicine hath beene
supplied for 3 yeares together? not one of this thinge
but the first hearing must per force pronounce a
Nullitie in the marriage. of wch Declaration wee knowe
the beginninge, but noe mortall mans witt, can foretell the
end, either in this person or in the example.

Then the Archbishopp for confirmation of this opinion
shewd the testimony of Beze. Melanthon, Perkins,
Heminges, Iohannes, Tenerinus, & Gaulus.

The Kings Aunswere.

To the first Article, that the scripture doth directly or by consequence, contains in it sufficient matter to decide all matters & controuersies, especially in matter appertayning to the church, This is my ne opinion propositis & one of the puritans, Argument: with out a better distinction or explanation.

For the orthodox proposition is, that the scriptures, doe directly or by consequence containe in it sufficient matter to decide all controuersies in points of faith and saluatio, of wch sort a Nullitie of marriage cannot be accompte for one, & therefore ye consequence vpon the former propo-sition must faile.

For further satisfaction of yo following question (I say) ye second question doth answere it, if there be warrant in scripture for pronouncinge a Nullitie, propter friguiditatem, then all the meanes, wch may make him, frigid us reape shame, must be comprehended in this, for why doth o church justly condemne the marriage of a man with his sisters daughters, or the marriage of 2. sisters, but a paritate rationis for none of them is in terminis prohibited in scripture is only the conclusion is gathered a paritate rationis. for if it bee not lawfull to marry ye father wife because thereby you discouer ye fathers shame: nor his sister, because she is his kinswoman, nor ye one sister, because thereby you discouer ye fathers & ye mothers shame. it can no more be lawfull to marry ye sisters daughter. for thereby also you discouer ye owne shame is also the same reason streues, pr, ascending or descending in points of consanguinity, qua-

The like is in this case. for although Christ spake only of 3 sorts of Eunuches, yet ratio est quia non potest esse copulatio inter Eunuchu & mulierem: & therefore S: Paule m. 1. Corinth. 7: telleth vs clearely that it is not conjugium sine copula carnis. & conclude therefore à paritate rationis, that Christ did comprehend vnder these 3 sorts all inabilitie, wch doth perpetually hinder copulation carnis versus hanc, whether it were naturall or accidentall, for what difference is there betweene Cuttinge of the hand, & being made impotent thereof? amputatio et mutilatio membri is all one in the ciuill lawe, And it is a like defrauding of the woman when either he who is to be her husband, is gelded or when the vse of that member towards her is by any vnlawfull meanes taken from him, neither is it any way needfull to craue particular warrant of Scripture for à nullitie, no more then of warrant in that place for any nullitie at all, for as Christ doth not directly say that à marriage so marred shall be nullified, neither doth hee teach what formes of proces shall bee vsed in that, neither maketh he mention of the triennall probation, no more then hee forbiddeth marriage with in the 4 degree. with out leaue obtained of the Bishopp of that Diocese. It is then sufficient for all modest Christians of the words of God, that marriage is no thing nulla sine copula, & that word quos Deus conjunxit are euer found in Scripture, where dessent is doth not precede vedit: they two shall bee one flesh. —

Butt whether the impedim^t. be vniuersall or versus hanc only or whether the fault thereof hath beene borne with in him or done to him by violence, or fallen to him by disease, or disproportion

or impotencie betwixt the parties, or vnnaturall practices, that is euer yuxatoo, here is eunuchus versus hame, et omnes alias, seeing to her only was her married.

Then paritate rationis such Nullities are grounded vpon the aforesaid warrant of scripture, neither had Christians occasion to speake of the Jewes marriage, concerninge maleficium versus hanc: for although it be apparant that God made King Abimilech & his servants vnable to abuse Sara Abrahams wife; & for was her made by God himself eunuchus versus hanc, & that bee not improbable, that the Diuell being Gods Ape, should imitate Gods works by his filthy witchcraft, by making such as God will plainly vnable versus hanc hominem, it be very probable, that it was longe after that time, the deuill put that trick vpon the earth.

And for the 3 & 4 questions, what mention the Fathers & Councels doe make of maleficium adversus hanc: I answeare that it may bee (if they were well searched) that ther some thinge to this purpose in them or at the least aliquid analogium wch & paritate rationis, or by consequence may serue to decide the Question. would be found in them.

But leaving this to search, my maine answeare is, that wee must distinguish of times, for in all the first ages as longe as persecution lay heavy vpon the Church, & before the emperor Christian the church did not medle wth any thinge wch drewe a consequence after it of possessions inheritance as marriage doth may euen diuers hundred yeares after the conversion of Emperors the judgmt & defynion of all such questions did still remaine in foro Ecclesiæ, till the papedome began to wax great & to assume

Or rather vsurpe to herselfe a supreame & independent power
Judiciatory in all ecclesiasticall causes, & therefore the fathers and
counsells had no occasion to make mention of that wch was
not de praesenti for at that time.

And besids that is an evill argument to say such a thing is vnlawfull
because the fathers & councells make not mention of it: for you
knowe much better then I, diuers & many points betwixt the papists
vs, are neuer mentioned by the fathers, because they could neuer
haue dreamed such questions would arise, and therefore are the
fathers exact only in such questions as were agitated vpon the
stage in theire time: as, de Trinitate: de duabs in Xpo naturis
or such like & therefore sufficient, that there can be nothing
found, wch may justly be vnderstood to contradict this opinion.

And it it very probable (as I said before) that this trick of Magick
had not then beene put in practicke in the world & therefore
not knowen or mentioned by them: for why may not the
diuill aswell finde out new tricks of witchcraft (when God
will permitt him) as hee doth daylie new sects of heresies for
his malice can neuer end, till the end of tymes.

To the 8th argument my former answere doth also serue, for till the
400. yeare after God (it may be that diuilish trick came
new to be discouered) yo^u know the old prouerbe ex malis moribus
bonae leges: & it is not vnlikely, that that time of darkenes
gaue the diuell occasion, to deuise such newe tricks: looke
my Demonologie, & yet was that Law, for wch yo^u citte
Hie cap^a by Charles the greate (who in many great points
as you knowe had so great knight, as I doe feare for me
this time, a time of slimnes, but hoope great forgiue that

Darkness was in points of superstition, I will still maytaine (as I have ever done) that for matter of order & policie all the world shall never be able to finde out any so good, and so ould an order of government to be put in the place of that in ffrance wherof there is no well governed common-wealth Christian world, wherein the common law is not receaued, to judge in questions of that matter; it is certaine that this question now in hand, is only a question of order & policie for the ground of this question, that the essentiall poincte of matrimony cannot be accomplished sine copulâ, is warrant by expresse scripture & confessed by y^e selfe

To y^e 6. Argument^s. (or rather hope) I feare that hope shall prove contrary to faith. for as sure as God is, there be deuills, & some deuills must have some power, & there power is in this world, for Sathan is the prince of this world, neither are the elect exempted from his power. for, was not Saint Paule was not xps said to all his disciples Cribuerit vos Sathanas: & if the deuill hath any power, it is one there flesh, & if one there flesh, rather ouer the filthiest & most sinfull parte thereof. whereunto originall ~~sinne~~ sinne is followed as God before & vnder the Law, to shew ofhis abhorrence of purging mans originall sinne, ordained the circumcision of the foreskin, & to exempt this of o^r profession from the power of witchcraft is a paradox never yet maintayned by any learned or wise man.

That the deuills power, is non for vniuersall against vs that I freely confesse, but that is vtterly restrained quoad nos (I hope) was then a minister of Geneua, wrenched to death, & never the witches dayly punished by y^e Law, if they can harme non but the papists. wee are too charitable for reuenge of them only.

Sathan is permitted to punish man, aswell for his breach of the
2. as of the 1: Table & therefore are wee non lesse guilty
then the papists are, & if the power of witchcraft may reach
to o^r life much more to a member not so governed by the
fancy, wherein the devill hath his principall operation, &
he may so estrange the husbands affection towards the wife
as he cannot be able to yforme that dutie vnto her, for
that is a common thing in many mens natures, that they
cannot doe that thing, but where they love, not fight but
where they are angrie God keepe vs therefor from putting
the triall of o^r profession vpon miracles, let the miracle
mongers live by there owne trade /

To the 7 argum^t touching remedies what doe you know wch
hee both parties, or either of them hath vsed this meanes
of remedy or not & that speciall remedy should be vsed
publiquely for them I can see not any necessity; for no
interest resp: nee ecclesiæ, & private persons are commanded
to there fastings and almes secretly & privatly, no such
cure also is like to succeed well except the p^rties owne
hartis & desires bee set thervpon: —

And as for y^e conclusio vpon the incommoty, whether vpon his
p^rson or the example I can see none in either so as to the
couple betweene them marriage was neuer accomplished &
they will peradventure both of them by the declaration of
the nullitie be made capable to accomplish marriage wth all
wch they could neuer doe betweene themselues wherein they may
have there satisfactio of there harts & enjoy the blessing of procreation
of children, & as for the example the law shall be fulfilled wth
due administratio of justice wch cannot leave for an example or praised

Authoritas facti or rather non facti sed lucr clarior in
this case, besides the many probations & confessions of the
p^ties^ which have been taken in this proces, whereas by the
contrarie, they shall be forcably kept together there
names & shadowes may bee kept together but never there
persons & affections ~~were~~ had they still beene forced to
p^e^tuall scandale or misery, or both & with such a kinde
of forced continency may argue the monks continency
may teach vs, & for a p^e^sident in time to come that reacho
no further, then open away of lawfull releife, to any
persons who shall chaunce to be distressed in that sort.

And for the legall doubts, they concerne none of y^e^ calling
if y^e^ conscience be resolued in poynts of diuinitie that is
y^e^ yarte to que y^e^ consent to nullitie & lett the lawyers
take the barthen of making firmall. And as for the
triennall probation I hope no man cann bee so blind as to
make a doubt whether that be taken before or after the suit
begunne, & in conclusion of diuine solutions of this question
proued clearly, that this resolution of this doubt, concerne
it was in blindnes (as you thinke) that is now proued
in the greatest time of light & purite of the Gospells
profession.

As for y^e^ extract vpon the late diuines opinions vpon this
question. I cannot guesse what y^e^ intent was in sending to
mee for they all agree in trueth with mee in opinion,
but there is such à^s^ malefic^i^um versus hanc hadd^e^
very in terlin passages proue that clearest. & for that
aduise concerning the remedies that is but consilium
non decretu, not imposing à necessitie but is to be vsed by
discretion as occasion shall serue or require it.

To conclude then, if this may satisfie y^e doubts: I will
wth o^r Saviours words: to S. Peter: cum conversus fueris
confirma fratres tuos: for on my conscience, all the doubt
I have yet seene, are nothing but nodos in scirpo quæ

The midwives appointed to make inspection upon the Lady
body, gave in, that the Lady of Essex is a woman apt
haue copulation, & to bring for Children. & that the sam
Lady is a virgin & uncorrupted.

Three Ladies affirme that they believe the sam for that
they were present when the midwives made the inspection
& did see them good reasons for it.

There is a sentence of Divorce given for the Nullitie o
the marriage, & both p^rties licenced to bee married
againe.

The commissioners that gave the sentence

Bishopps. { Winchester. / Elie. / Rochester. / Rochfild & coventry. } Doctors { S^r Julius Cæsar / Sr. thomas Parry / S^r Daniel Dun

Commissioners dissentings.

Bishopps. { Archbishoppe of Cantor: / Bishopp of London. } Doctors. { S^r John. Bennet / Francis James. / thomas Edwards

The proceedings against Richard Weston at his arraignment at Guild hall the 9th Nouember 1615. before the Lord Major, The Lord cheife justice of England &c. other justices of the kings bench Crooke, Daudridge and Haughton & Serjeant Crew & other of the commissioners.

The courte being sett, the Kings speciall commission being read the Lord cheife justice gaue the charge, the effect whereof was.

First to expresse the kings pious inclination & commaund vnto just proceedinge, against all such as should be any way proued to be guilty of the murtheringe and poysoninge of S^r Thomas Ouerbury his majesties prisoner in the tower.

Secondly, to aggreuat the manner & qualitie of the murther, in shewinge the hainesse of poysoninge, aboue all other kinds of murther. declaringe the vengeance of God, & his justice in punishing the offendors. he alleaged the 9 Genesis: 6. qui cumque effuderit humanum sanguinem, effundet & illius sanguis ad imaginem, quippe factus est homo. hee also tooke the example of Vrias & David. hee therin obserued how adultery is most often the begetter of that sinne.

Then hee declared that of all Felonies murther is the most horrible, of all murthes poisoninge the most detestable, & of all poysoninge the lingeringe poysoninge.

Hee shewed how by act of Parliament 22 Hen: 8. cap. 9. it was made a treason & that willfull poysons should be boyled to death, rehearsinge the example of one Rich. Rouse: that had poysoned a man & a woman, & was therefore sealed to death.

Then hee laid open to the Jury the baseness & cowardnes of poysoners who attempt it secretly, against wch there is no meanes of preservation or defence for a mans life, and how rare it was to heare poysoninge in England, so detestable it was to ye nation. but that since the Deuill hath taught Dutchs to bee conninge in it, so that they can poison in what distance of space they please by Corrupninge the Natiu calidum or humidum radicale in one month 2. 3. or more as they list wch 4 manner of wayes both execute. 1. gustu. 2. haustu. 3. odore. 4. contactu.

Hee finished his Charge wth serious exhortations to the Jury to doe justice in presentinge the truth notwithstanding the greatnes of any that vpon their euidence should appeare to be guilty of the same offence, comfortinge both Judge & Jury wth the scripture. Psal. 5. ver. vltimo. For thou Lord wilt giue thy blessing vnto the righteous. & wth thy fauourable kindnes wilt thou defend him, as wth a shield.

The charge being ended, the Jury consisting of 14 persons did for the space of an howre depart from the court into a priuat Roome where they receaued there euidence from M. Fanshaw. his majesties Coroner & Attorney counsell prepared & instructed for that purpose, aswell of the prisoner him as of diuers other witnesses before that time taken by the Lord chiefe justice of England & Others the Lords of his Mats Councell.

In the meane time Mr Wm Goare Sheriffe of London, was commaunded to fetch his prisoner remaining at his house to be ready in Court for his arraignment.

for a certaine space after the grand jury returned
to the barr, & delivered in their bill of indictm^t: signed
Billa vera, whereupon there prisoner was sett vp to the
barr, and the indictm^t: read by m^r Ranshaw w^ch
conteined in effect. That Richa Weston late
of the age of 60. yeares, not having the feare of God before his
eyes, but instigated & seduced by the diuell, deuised & contriued
not only to kill vpon the body of S^r: Thom: Overbury knight
great sickness and diseases, but also to depriue him of his
life. And to bring the same to passe: 9^o maij: 1613. & in
the yeare of his m^tie raigne, at the Tower of London,
in the parish of all hallowes Barking did obtaine & get into
his hands, certaine poyson of greene & yellow colo^r called Rosalgar
(knowing the same to be dead ly poyson) & them same
did maliciously & felonious ly mingle & compound with a
kind of broath powred out into a dish, and the same broath
so infected and poysoned did giue & deliuer to the said S^r
Thom: Overbury: as wholsome and good broath, to th'intent
therew^th to kill & poyson the said S^r: Tho. Overb: w^ch
broath he tooke and did eate: Also the said Weston: 1. day
of July. 11. Reg: aforesaid in like manner gott an other
poyson or poysonous powder: called white Arsnick and
knowing the same to be dead ly poyson did giue vnto the
said S^r Thom: Overb: as good wholsome and medicinable
powder to eate, who in like manner tooke & eate the same.

Also that Weston vpon the said. 19. of July, following
did gett a nother poyson called Mercuri sublimat (knowing
the same to be mortall poyson) and put & mingled the

in tarts & fritters and gave the same vnto the said Sr: Thom
ouerbury: as good & wholsome to eat wch in like manner
he did eate.

Also the said Weston and an other man vnknowne (being
an Apothecary) afterwards vpon the 14 Sept: feloniously
did gett a poyson called Mercury sublimat (knowing the
same to be deadly poyson) and put the same into a
glister mingled wth the same poyson and the said
glister the said Apothecary for the reward of 2o pounds
vnto him, did put & they ministre (as good and wholsome)
into the guts of the said Sr: Tho: Ouer: and that Weston
was present & aiding to the said Apothicary in ministring
and infusing the said glister and that immediatly after
diuers the taking of the said poysoned meats & minister
the said glister, the said Sr Thom: did Languish & fell
into diseases & distempers, and from the foresayd tymes of
taking and eating of the said poysoned meats & ministring
the said Glister, dyed and so the jury gave their
verdict, that Weston in this manner had killed poyson
and murdered the said Sr Thomas: against the King
peace and dignitie.

wch indictm: being read, he was demaunded if hee were gu
of the felony, murtheringe and poysoninge thas aforesaid
or noe, to wch he answered doubling his speech, Lord haue m
vpon mee, Lord haue mercy vpon mee: but beinge ag
demaunded, hee answered not guilty & being then demau
howe he would be tried, hee answered hee referred him
to God, refusing to put himselfe and his cause vpon the

or Countrie, according to the law or customs. /

Hereupon the Lord chiefe Justice and all the other in their order
spent the space of an howre in perswadinge him to put himselfe
vpon the triall of the Law, declaring vnto him the daunger and
mischiefe hee ran into, by refusinge his ordinary course of triall,
being the meanes ordained by God for his deliverance if hee
were innocent and how by this meanes hee should make himselfe
the authour of his owne death, even as if hee should with a
knife or dagger kill or stabb himselfe, exhorting him verie
earnestly, either with repentance to confesse his fault or else
with humilitie and duetie to submitt himselfe to his ordinaries
triall, whereunto he stubbornly answered welcome be
the grace of God and hee referred himselfe to God, and
so when perswasions could not prevaile the Lord chiefe Justice
playnely delivered his opinion, that hee was perswaded that
Weston had beene dealt withall, by some great one, guilty of
the same fact as accessary to stand mute wherebie they might
escape their punishment and therefore he commaunded (for
satisfaction of the world) that the Queenes attorney there
present should declare and sett foorth the whole evidence, without
any feare or partiality. and yet notwithstanding he once more
vsed much perswasion to the prisoner to consider what distruction
he brought vpon himselfe by his contempt, & declared
to him, how his offence of contempt was in refusinge his
tryall, and how the lawes of the Land, had provided a sharpe
and more severe punishment to such offenders, then vnto
those that were guilty of high treason and so repeated
the forme of judgment given against such. the extremitie
and rigour whereof was expressed in these words. onely
forgoes, et fame. /

For the first that hee was to receaue his punishm^t by the Law to bee extended, and then to haue waights laid vpon him no more then hee was able to beare, wch weere a little and by ^ to bee increased.

For the second, that hee was to be exposed in an open place wa to prison in the open aire being naked.

And lastly that he was to bee serued w^th the courcest bread to be gotten, and water out of the next ditche or pond to the place of execution, and that day he had water hee should haue no bread, and that day he had bread, he should ha noe water, and in this torment hee was to linger as long as nature could linger out, so that oftentimes ~~times~~ they Liued in this extremitie: 9: or 9: dayes, adding, further that that life left thim so, judgmt. should finde him, & therefo he required him, vpon consideraunce of this reasons to advise himselfe to plead to Counties, who not withstandi absolutely refused. /

Hereupon the Lord chiefe Justice willed S^r Lawrence Hide the Queenes Attourney, and thereof counsell for the King, to manifest vnto the audience the guiltines of the said Mor by his owne confession, signed w^th his owne hande, and if in the declaration thereof, they mett w^th any great prsons w soeuer, as certainely there was great ones confederate in that fact, hee should boldly and faithfully open wa soeuer was necessary, and he could proue against them whereupon M^r Attourney beganne his accusation. /

First he charged the Countesse of Somersett and the Earle to bee principall movers to this vnhappie Conclusion. wch. Twenty to bee of the confederacy, and the pay mes. of the poysoners rewarded

On wch I could not but observe the Attorneys boldnes in terming the Countesse a dead and rotten branch wch being lopt of the whole tree (meaning that noble familie) would y rather the better.

Secondly, he proceeded to the cause wch hee affirmed to bee the malice of the Countesse, and the ground of this malice hee alleadged and by many inductions: hee said only affirmed that S. Thomas Overb: had dissuaded him from that adulterous marriag of the Countesse of Somersett. then Countesse of Essex, and for this hee alleageth as followeth.

Sr. Thom: Overb: having diuers tymes discouered the Earle then Viscount Rochester from seeking by any meanes to procure marriage wth the Countesse of Essex (too wch hee saw the Earle to much inclined) having very earnest conference wth the Earle one night in presence in the Gallery at white hall, concerninge his intentions: presuminge the Earle ~~one night in presence in the Gallery at white hall~~ At that time to much to desire that vnlawfull Communication, in the ardency of his present affection vnto the Earle, and great preiudice of the future misery it would inevitable bring vnto him: his well beloued Lord & friend, vsed speeches to this effect.

Speake my Lord, if you doe marry that filthy base woman, you will vtterly ruine y honour, and yourselfe, you shall never doe it by my advice or consent, and if you doe you had best to looke to stand fast.

My Lord replyeth (bewitched wth the Love of the said Countesse moued by Sr: Thom: Ouerb: for so slaught mye her) answered, my owne leggs are straight and strong enough to beare me vp. but in faith I will be euen wth you for this, and so parted from him in a great rage.

This conference was ouer-heared by some in an adioyning Room and their depositions for the truth thereof were read in Court.

Though this conference moued the Earle to such a sudden collor yet it seemes Sr: Thom: Ouerb: conceaued it no otherwise then a sudden extreame distemperature or passion, and not a setled conclusion of their hollow friendshipp, and therefore continued his friendshipp as before, in wch the Earle seemed as reciprocall, how soeuer in his double dealings it seemed to bee clearely otherwise.

For vpon this the Earle moued the King to appointe Sr: Thom: Ouerb: Embassadour for Russia the King willing to y^e fauor Sr: Thom as one whose worth and valour was yet vnknowne to his Mty: accordingly adioyned him that seruice, the wch Sr: Thom: was most willing to accept of, as a gracious effecte of the Kings towards him, wch willingnes was proued by the deposition of 2 or 3 seuerall witnesses read in Court and by the oath of Sir Dudly Diggs, who voluntaryly at the arraignment, in open court ouer his oath witnessed howe Sr: Thom: had imparted to him his readines to be imployed in his Embassage.

The Earle afwell abusing the Kings fauours: in moouing to their fauour, where he meant the parties should take no benefit

As bearing vnhonest freendshipp in confidence with Sr Tho:
concerning that imployment perswaded him to refuse an
Embassage (whereby (quoth he) I shall not bee able to performe
such kindnes to you & advantage as having you with mee (quoth
he) if you be blamed or committed for it care not I will
quickly free you from all harme: Sr Thom: thus betrayed by
a freend to serue in that nature refused, whereupon iustly
Equity he was committed to the Tower.

Being thus committed, hee was presently committed close prisoner
and a keeper hee must have, and who must that bee but
this Weston, who was commended by the countesse of Essex to
Sr: Thom: Monson to be by him recommended ouer to the Lieftenant
of the tower, to be keeper to Sr: Thom: Ouerb: and Sr: Thomas
Monson according to the countesses request commended the said
Weston: to Sir Jervis: Helmash: whereupon the said Lieftenant
intertayned the said Weston: and appointed him to keepe Sr Tho. Ou
The same Weston vpon his owne confession read in Court
signed with his marke) had during the time shee was Countesse
of Essex beene a procurer and Pandor to the said Earle vnto
Rochester, and the said countesse of Essex, for the conveyinge
and effecting of their adulterate desires, wch they did diuers
times consumate, meetinge in Mrs Turners howse once betwee
the howres of 11. & 12: and at Hamersmith and at diuers
tymes elsewhere for the same purpose, so that now by the
procurem't of the said Countesse who hatted Sr: Thomas Ou:
for being a good meanes to keepe from contaminat mixe
them selues with such lustfull embracem'ts. and from the
purposed marriage the mutually Labored to compasse) hee
Pandor was become his keeper, a fitt agent for lust and murther.

Weston now beinge become Sr Thom: Overb: Keeper kept him so close, that hee scarce had the comfort of the light nether suffred hee any one to visit him, father, brother, his best friend his nearest kindred, were strangers vnto him, from the beginning of his imprisonment, vnto the end.

Mrs Turner vpon the first dayes keepinge promised to giue him a contentinge reward, if hee would administer such things to Sr Thom: Overb: as should bee sent vnto him: thinking him a fitt instrumt to compasse black murder that was so acquainted wth foule lust and so (indeede) they found him for hee agreed, and did promise to administer whatsoeuer he should send vnto him. Mrs Turner vpon this mure thereof promise, the very same day that Rich: Weston became Sir Thom: Overb: Keep, being 6. May. 1613. sente vnto the said Weston certaine yealow poyson called Rosacar in a viall.

Weston hauinge receaued that same poyson the aforesaid 6 May: at night beringe Sr Thom: Overbury suppose in one hand, poyson in the other hand meets wth the Lieftenant and after him in theise termes. Sr: shall I giue him now vpon the word Now, my Lord Chiefe Justices seruaunts, to aggreuate the maliciousnes affirming that hee particle now shewed a resolution to poyson him, only fit time and circumstances were to be respect by him, what shall you giue him replyes the Lieftenant, blamming him he carries the poyson in to an inwarde roome, wth Weston 6 May did administer to Sir Thom: Overb: in breath: this was proued both by the Lieftenant, and Westons confession.

Weston having given this poyson, wch wrought very vehemently wth him by vomits & extreame purginge, he p̄sently demaunds his reward of Mrs Turner; who replies, the man is not dead yt. effect yr worke, and you shall have yr hire this was also confessed by Weston, vnder his Marke. /

S.r Thom: Ouerb: by this close imprisonment and poyson grew sick, and daily languishing after 3 or 4 weeks space (considering he had not obtayned his freedome and release having not freinds suffred to come vnto him but only such as the Earle sent to comfort him (of his owne followers) wrot to the Earle to remember his imprisonment. who returne answere, the time would not suffer, but so soone as possibly it might bee, hee would hasten his deliuery (so indeed it seemes he intended to bee) but not so as S.r Thom: conceaued, whose true affection would not admitt his judg. to debate the straightnes of his imprisonment, wch he might well think then the Earle might easily haue released. /

In the 5. June viscount Rochester sent a letter to S.r Thomas in the letter hee sent him a white powder, willing S.r Thom: to take it, it will (quoth he) make you more sick, but feare not I will make this a meanes for yr deliuery, and for yr health. S.r Thom: Ouerb: neuer dreaminge of base treachery, but conceauing of it as a freindly policie receaued the said powder, wch wrought vppon him more vehemently whereupon his sickness grew more vehement, & violent, and his languishment encreased, wch white powder, vppon Westons confession was poyson.

Sir Thom: Ouerb: his sickness encreasing, and wth it his wonderinge that hee could not in two months space be released after his Physick taking. he thus writt to the Earle, lamentinge

Lamenting his owne estate, and taxing the earle of forget-
fulnesse of his estate, for his faith being thus shaken with
the earles vnkindness gave way for his judgment to scanne
those accompts, rather like an vnderstanding man then
like a Loving freind as appeareth by his letter sent to the
Viscount Rochester, th' effect whereof was thus, as it is averred
By the depositions of S^r. Thomas: Overbury knt. who saw the
letter) S^r. I wonder you have not found yet meanes to
effect my delivery but I remember y^e said, y^e would be even
with mee not suspecting (as it seemeth) any proceedings
but an vnkind forgetfulness of my Lord of Rochester)
and so you are indeed, but assure y^e selfe my Lord, if you
doe not releeve mee, but suffer mee thus to dye my
blood will be required at y^e hands.

My Lord comforts him, and excuses that it cannot yet bee
compassed, S^r. Thom: after the ponder taken languished
deadly, and to comfort him some followers of my Lord
of Rochest^r. are sent to him dayly in the name of my
Lord, by the appointment and procurement of my Lady
off Essex, as Weston confesseth, to visit and comfort him
and intreat him if desire any meate, that hee should
speake, and it might better perhaps provided for
him, then hee should have in the towre, this was about
3 monthes after his imprisonment.

Hee as man sick desire luscious meats, desired tarts and
jellies w^ch provided by Mrs. Turner w^th the knowledge of
the said Countesse, and sent vnto him, of w^ch hee did eate
the w^ch tarts were poysoned w^th Mercury sublimat

Not being so well coloured as other Tarts are. And Weston confessed, that hee was straightly charged not to leave thereof.

Sr. Thom: thus continuing in languishinge and consuming with extremity of sickness untill 6 Septem: when the aforesaid Mr Turner did procure an Apothecaryes boy for 20s to poysone a glister, wch was by Weston and the boy afterwards administred as good physick upon the 7 octobr. after receipt of the glister, hee fell into great extremities of vomitinges & other purginge, wch left him not till it caused his soule to leave his poysoned body. this Weston confessed and signed.

Being thus dead, hee was presently and very unreverently buried in a pitt, digged in a very meane place, on his body (thus venemously infected) appeared diuers blames & blisters whereupon they (to take away aswell his good name as his life) did slanderously report that hee dyed of the french pox, but this reporte was cleared in Court, by the deposition of his servants, and other men of worth there read, that before his imprisont. hee was a cleane and sound body, only he had an yssue in his left Arme purposly made for the benefitt of his nature for the avoidinge of Rhume and ill humours, wth with his continually sitting at his study hee had subjected himselfe vnto. he further observed the custom of the Left. to be, that if any prisoner dyed there, his body is to be viewed and inquisition to be taken by the Coroner.

But Sr. thomas. Overb: freinds and others by noe meanes might bee suffered to see his body and although it was reported, that there was an inquisition taken, yet it could by no meanes bee found.

After Mr. Attorney had ended his speach. Mr. Yelverton of Counsell for the King declared to the Court what familiarity hee had with Sr. Thom: Overb: being both of Temple together, and commending his singulare honest and vertuous Conversation affirming that hee was addicted to no dishonest actions, and from this hee proceeded to urge his hard usage in the Tower, where hee might have no company but the Apothecary & a Walloone and reprehending the sending of the tarts and Jellyes in my Lord of Somersetts name, ended his speech with the saying: peccat uxus, ne peccant omnes, peccat peccans, ne peccat resp: Then by the commandmt. of the Court were read by Mr. Fanshawe the exagitations of Juares witnesses taken before my Lord chiefe justice & others, wch in effect were as followeth /

Lawrence Dawes sworn & Sr. Thom: Overb: examined 15 October: 1615. before the Lord Chiefe Justice.

Hee said that hee had served Sr Thom: Overb: 8. or 9. yeares, in all wch time hee was very healthfull, and never kept his bed for any sicknes, only sometimes he was troubled with the sciatica for ease whereof hee had the advise of his Phisition, an issue made in his Left arme but before his imprisonmt. he had no sores, blisters or other defects in his whole body.

Also he saith that Sr. Thom: would have gone over upon the embassage, but was dissuaded by Somersett, who promised to beare him out. hee complained hee needs not to bee poysoned if Somersett would, and that if hee dyed, his blood should bee required at his hands.

That Somersett was as good as his word who found him at Newmarket, hee would be even wth Sr. Thom: Overb: —

151

Henry Payton and other Sert. of Sr.
Thom: examined: 15. octob: 1615.

Her affirmeth that Sr. Thom: was of very good constitution of body, that her vsed sometimes to runne, to play at foyles, and such like, that her was of a moderat diet neuer had any soares, saving the said ffyue in his arme: that Sr. Thom: wrott letters to Somersett, signifying that her needed not to ly in person if Somersett would, and if her dyed, his blood should bee required at his hands.

Also that Sr. Thomas: at one of Clock at night meeting Somersett in the Gallery at white hall, had speeches with him touching the Countesse whom he called base woman, and tould Somersett that he would ouerthrow all the kings fauours and honours and vppon displeasure betweene them at this conference, Sr. Tho: desired Somersett, that he might haue his portion due, and he would shift for him selfe, whervnto Somersett answered, and my legge are straight enough to carry mee and so did flinge away in anger, all wch this examinat heard, being in a chamber nex to the Gallery.

Sr. Dudly Diggs being present in Court and sworne, declared vnâ voca, that her was sent by a prime counsellor a great man, to Sr. Thom: Ouerbury: to bring him to this great man, wch her did and comming togeather ouer the water in a boat, Sr. Thom: was much discontented, the reason wherof (her said) was, that her was perswaded by the great man, to wth drawe him selfe from the Court, for some reasons, wch her disclosed not and Sr. Dudly after words being sent by the Lords, to know the resolution of Sr. Thom: touching the embassage, her found him to redy vppon my Lord of Somersett, my ytious Chiefe knows the kings minde better then any, and y the mind of my precious Chiefe.

Richard. Weston the prisoner. 6. octob.
1615. Coram Cooke et Crewe.

Hee affirmeth that before Sr: thom: Ouer: was in the towre he this examinat carried 3 letters to Somersett, for Lady Essex to Roych Newmarkett, & Hampton Courte, and hee deliuered answeres to the Turner and that vppon the letter to Hampton Courte hee had answere by word of mouth only, that this Boy would come and that comming back hee mett with the Countesse and Mrs Turner halfeway in the Coatch, whom hee tould, that the Lord only answered so, whereupon the Countesse steake out of the way, into a farmours house hard by, whether with in a little space Somersett came, and that afterwards they mett in the night at Mrs. Turners house in Pater Noster row. and he confesseth, that of myeare before Sr: thom: his imprisonm no man carried letters betweene them but hee.

Sr: Tho: Monson examined 5. octob.
Coram Cooke et Crew.

Hee sayeth that hee neuer knew Weston vntill Sr: thom: Ouerb: was prisoner in the towre, and that he procured him to the Lieftenant, to keepe to Sr: thom: Ouerb: at the request of the Countesse.

Anne Turner widowe examined.
11. octob. 1615. Cooke.

Shee sayeth that Weston was an ancient serut. and her husband sayeth in the Country, shee denieth to haue any thinge to doe in placing him in the Towre. but saith that the Countesse of Essex did effect it, & vsed the helpe of Sr: Thomas Monson therin

Sr: Jeruis Helwish examined 3. octobre.
1615. Coram Cooke et Crew.

He saith, he had a letter from Sr: thom: Monson requesting him that Weston might bee keep of Sr: th Ouer: and that hee did performe it and afterwards hauing conference with Sr th. Mons. tould him his keepe not to loitter

1534

Rich: Weston the prisoner
examined againe.

Hee confesseth that hee shewed him the glasse that was deliuered him by his sonne from the countesse to the Leiftenant. and told him, that it came from the countesse of essex, and that hee p̄suaded him not to giue it to Sr: Thom:

Hee saith that hee had diuers talks from the Countesse to giue to Sr. Tho: wch Cakeatts that hee himselfe should not taste of them. and confesseth that he thought they were poysoned.

Hee saith Mrs Turner appointed him to come to whitehall, and shee deall wth him, to giue Sr. Thom: Ouerb: the water, and told him hee should not drinke thereof, and was promised a great reward, and hee suspected it was poyson, his sonne afterwards deliuered him the glasse, wch hee shewed to the Leiftenant. who rebuked him, and so he left the glasse in a study neare to Sr: thom: ouer his chamber but gaue it him not, though he told Mrs turner the next day, hee had giuen the water. wch made Sr: thom: to vomitt often, and to bee exceeding sick. hee saith Mr. fames and Mr. Rawlyns seruants to the countesse came often to knowe of this examinat how Sr: thom: did, and what hee would eate, and they deliuered tarts & gillies, wch hee gaue to Sr: thomas: who did eate thereof.

Hee saith hee demaunded of Mrs Turner his reward, who answered hee was to haue no reward, till Sr: thom: were dead, and that hee was p̄romised a purseuants place, but confessed afterwards at two seuerall tymes, hee receaued secretly after the death of Sr thomas: for a reward he receaued by Mrs Turner from the Countesse.

James E. W. graue

180 to

William Weston sonne to the
Prisoner examined.

Hee confesseth hee receaued a glasse from the Countesse by
her Seert. 2. inches longe being wrapped in paper, wch hee
deliuered to his father in the towre.

Then was read the confession of the Lieut. to the King That W.
mett him carrying supper for Sr. Thom: in th'one hand and
the glasse in the other, and demaunded of the Lieut. thus. Sr
shall I giue him nowe whereat the Lieut. stepped to him, and
asked him what, to wch Weston said, why Sir knowe you not
what is to bee done? and so the L. hauing made him to cary
the mate, dyswaded him, and hee seemed to be resolued not
to doe it, and afterwards this Weston confessed to the L.
that an Apothecary had 20s for ministringe a glister to
Sr. Thom: Ouerbury.

Weston the prisoner examined before
the Lord Enoch and others.

Confesseth that Sr. Thomas had a glister wch gaue him
60 stooles & vomitts, allso being confronted wth the writing
of Sr. Jeremie Hetwash, and chardged thereuth hee confesse
the same to bee true.

Symon Mayson Mustion examined.

Saith, hee serued Sr. Tho: Monson 6. yeares and is preferd
by him to the Kings seruice, but waiteth sometymes vpon
Sr. Tho: Monson, he saith he receaued diuers tarts & Gellies
from the Countesse of Essex to bee carried to the L. of the
towre for Sr. Thom: Ouerbury.

Paule de la Bell examined.

Saith that the 3. July hee made Sr. Thomas Ouerbury to
bath By Doctor Mickains deuise to coole his body, and that hee

his body exceeding faire & cleare and againe her saw his body (being dead full of blisters, and so consumed away that he never saw the like body.

Eyles Rawlins a tinnisman of St.

Thom: Ousebury examined.

Saith vppon the heute of the murther of Sr: thom: Ousebury her was taxed by some, why her made not prosecution: her thervppon made a petition and deliuered it to the king, that the examination of the Cause might bee referred to judgment of the law and denieth that her was perswaded by any to the contrary.

Her saith that the comming often to the tower to see Sr: thom: could not be suffred, to see him as much as out of the windows and Weston tould him that it was the commaundement of the counsell & Leaf.

The L: of the tower examined

Coram Cooke & Crew.

Her saith that after the death of Sr thom: Weston came to him and tould him her was much neglected and slyghted by the Countesse and would receaue no rewards, but afterwards her confessed her had receaued: 100li: and should receaue more. And the L: also saith, that Sr: thom: Ousebury was very angrie with his Apothecary at certain vomitts wch her had, would be found wth in a day or 2. standing ill coloured, and that no body did eat thereof but Sr: thom: and Weston confessed vnto him that the Apothicary had 20li for ministering the glister.

and also the tarts and jellies wch her had

This examination being read and applied to the purpose the Lord chiefe Justice said her would discharge his duty

First to God in giuing all glory for the bringing to light of so horrible and wicked a fact, and next to the king his great majestie who as in the case of the like nature as in the case of Yanquez and Turner so specially in this hath giuen strict charge of due and just examinatō to bee had wthout any manner of partiality or feare in the world, to the intent that as well innocent may bee freed, as the no cent and guilty seuerely punished.

And for this purpose his Matie hath wth his owne hand written 2 sheets of paper on both sides concerning justice to be administred ~~on both sides~~ to all parties to bexamined wch writing the L. cheife justice shewd to the Lord Mayor and the rest of the commissioners and then bee declared the kings justice who albeit the many fauours and honors wch his majestie hath bestowed on the Lord of Somersett and his nearnes to his person by reason of his office yet hee had committed him prisoner to the Deane of Westminster's house vnder the custody of Sr Oliuer St John, and also had committed his Lady, so hauing laid of all against demaunded of the prisoner if hee would putt himselfe to be tried by the Contry wch he refused. The court was adiourned till Munday following at two of the Clock in the afternoone.

The second Arraignment of Richard Weston.

On munday 23. Octob. 1615. to wch day the court was adjourned by the said commissioners after proclamation made, the Jury of life & death called, the prisoner Weston was sett to the barr, and Mr Tanshaw clarke of the Crowne declared vnto him, that hee had beene

Formerly arraigned and had pleaded not guilty, so hee remainded of him how hee would betryed? whereunto the prisoner answered by God and his country, and thereupon the Jury being sworne the Indict. being read, as before, S^r. Laurence Hide the Queenes attorny, being of the councell w^th the King, having briefly rehearsed the effect of indictm^t. shewed how that hee must nessesarily mention others that were guilty of the same fact, wherein, if any other man or woman were touched, the cause it was, and not he that touched them.

And therefore Weston being but a Stranger to S^r. Tho: Overs: and one who by himselfe could reape no benefitt by his death it was against all reason that would doe it of himselfe, therefore (said he) I must needes open the whole plott, and having first declared the worth and honesty of S^r. Thom: Overb: shewed his familiarity w^th the Lord of Rochester. and how hee often willed him to forbeare the company of the Lady Essex, tearming her a vild and bad woman, w^ch shewed the anger and malice against him.

And that afterwards the King intended for the honor of preferment of S^r Thom: Overb: to send him vppon an Embassage whereunto hee was willinge but was dealt w^th and persuaded by the Lord Rochester to disobey the Kings direction & counsell w^th promises that hee would beare him out, by w^ch contempt S^r Thom: was committed to the tower 22 Aprill 1613. S^r Willi^a Wade being Lieu^t. of the tower. and 6 May: Following S^r Willi^a was removed, and S^r. Jarvis Helwish putt in his place.

And the next day after, Weston by the procurem.t of the
Countesse was preferred to the service of the L. and to
bee keeper of Sr Thom: wch Weston had beene procurem.t
to Mrs Turner; and beene the only agent in Conveying lett.rs
and messages betweene Rochester and the Countesse and his
whose office should have beene, to save and keepe me,
now appointed to kill and murther him.

Shee shewed how the very same Day of his entainment
at the Tower he was sent for to the Countesse who
so perswaded him, that if hee would give Sr Thom: a
water, that should bee delivered to him hee should
well rewarded and shee had him not fast of it him

And that the 9 of the same moneth of May, the said
water was secretly sent from the Countesse to Weston
by his sonne and the same night Weston meeting wth
the L. and having Sr: Thom: Overbury in one hand and
the said glasse in the other, hee demaunded of the L.
Sr: shall I give it him now, whereupon the L. tooke
him aside and perswaded him so farre forth that hee
confessed that hee thanked God once hee knew that he
mett wth him /

But Mr Attourney observed this, not withstanding that
the L. left him goe away wth the poyson, and albeit
hee now denyeth he ever gave poyson, yet said shee
delivered it. he confessed to Mrs Turner hee had done
it saying it had made him very sick, an to vomite
often demaunding of her his reward, to wch shee answered
hee was not to have his reward vntill Sr: Thom: were dead

Then he shewed how the Last of June following a certaine
powder was sent in a Letter to Sr. Thom: From Rochester
perswading him not to feare though it made him sick
for that should bee the reason to move the king for
his enlargment.

And that fowlkeing of Leyton: weston and the apothecary
ministred this glister to Sr: Thom: wch gave him 60 stooles
and vomitts and that hee dyed the next day, remembring
the Straingies of the botches and biles one his body,
being dead, hee shewed how Weston came to Mrs Turner
for his reward, wch was referred till his death and that
hee had receaued in secrett from the Countesse by Mrs Turner
at seuer all tymes for his reward 180li and that the Apo-
thecary had for his reward 20tie all wch Weston had
confessed to bee true.

Then remembring how ignominiously they buried him not
suffering any to see him, for feare hee should bee digged
vpp againe, and wth out any Coroners inquest that should
be found, and thus hee ended his speech.

And to all this opened and sett forth by Mr. Attorney. Mr. Serle
only added thus much wch need ordered the Jury to
consider. that Weston was sent to Mrs Turner when
Sr. Thom: was committed, and then hee was entertayned
made keep of Sr. Thom: Overb: and having dispatched
his business (Sr: Thom: being dead and poysoned) hee
staies no longer at the tower, but returnes againe to
Mrs Turner.

Then the Lord chiefe Justice exhorted the Jury, to take
God before their eyes, and with equall ballaunce to

To waigh aswell the answere of the prisoner as the pr-
-ofes and examinations against him declaring unto them
how quietly & freely her had examined him from tyme to
tyme wthout miraclinge or rough vsage wth the prisoner
confessed. and my Lord for matter of Law satisfied the
Jury. that although the poysoning in the Indictmt spe-
-cified to bee wth Rosalar, wth Aconick. Mercurii sublimat. yet
the Jury were not to expect so precise proofe in that
point, shewing how impossible it were to convict a poy-
-soner who vseth not to take any witnesses to the composing
his subtle cunning, wherefore her declared the Law
in the like ~~manner~~ case: And if a man be indicted for
murthering of a man wth a dagger, and it fall out
upon evidence to have done wth a swords or wth a
rapier or wth nether but wth a staffe in this case
the instrument killeth not, so that the Jury find the
murther, and so in the prisoners case, if they
be satisfied of the poysoning, it skilleth not wth
what, therefore her requireth to attend the proofe.

Then were read first the examinations of Lawrence
Davis, as at the first arraignment, then of Henry
Payton both servants to Sr: Thom: Overbury: then
of Weston himselfe for merely read /

Then the examinations of Sr: David Wood taken 24. oct. 1615. for
the first arraignment. her sayth her had obtained the Kings
to a suit for wch he was a petitioner, and that her was crossed by
the Lord Rochester. and Sr: Thom: Overbury. that for certain
words her had receaued from Sr: Thom: Overb: her intended to
bastinado him that this suit would have beene worth 2200li
and that Rochester would not lett it go affr. vnles he might
have it to /

That the Lady Essex sent for his examinat vppon the day that the King and Queene went to Rochester. wth the Lady Elizabeth: and told him shee vnderstood, that hee had receaued much wrong from Sr: Thom: Ouer: and that hee was a gentleman that could reuenge him selfe and Sr: Thom: had much wronged her & Sr: David answered, that Sr: Thom: had refused him the field, shee perswaded him to kill him, and promised to him 1000 to his reward and protection from his enemies, wch hee refused saying: hee would be loath to hazard going to Tyborne vppon a womans word but shee still perswaded him hee might easily doe it as he returned late home from Sr: Charles Willmots in a coatch. /

Then were read they examinations of Sr: Thom: Monson and Mrs Turner at the first arraignment.

Next the examination of Weston before the Lord Vouch: Sr: Ralph: Winwood: Sr: Thomas Parry: and Sr: ffoulke Greuill at the Dutchie house 29. Sept. 1615 where Weston did confesse, hee was preferred to the keeping of Sr: Thom: Ouerb: by mrs Turner vppon the meanes and request of Sr: Thom: Monson to the L: and that shee told him the chiefe purpose of Westons keeping of Sr: Thomas: Ouer: was to suffer no Letters or other p. messages to passe to or frowe, and to that purpose he aduised the Lieftenant.

Westons examinat 5. octo. 1615

Hee confesseth that the next day hee was preferred to the Tower where had the keeping of Sr. Thom: Ouerb: and soone after hee receaued the glasse by his sonne secretly from the Countesse and that the L: told him all the Tarts likewise came to him from her. And he confessed that the Countesse willed him to giue them to Sr: Thomas Ouerbury. But not tast of them himselfe. —

Weston examined 1. October.
1615.

Confesseth that Mrs Turner appointed him to come to white hall to the Countesse the next day that hee was at the tower and that hee went and the countesse did request him to give to Sr: Thom: Overb: a water with shee should deliver him, but not to drinke of it himselfe, shee promised to give a good reward and hee suspected it was poyson. hee receaued the glasse by his sonne, and told the L. of it who did rebuke him and hee sett the glasse in a little study. hee confesseth hee told Mrs Turner he had given it him and demaunded his reward. That Mr. James and Mr. Rawlins my Lord of Somersets men, came often to knowe of him, what tarts, jellies or wine, Sr: Thom: would have, and that they brought diuers tymes Tarts and Jellies whereof hee did eate.

Hee confesseth to have receaued in rewards of the Countesse after Sr: Thom: Overb: death by Mrs. Turner seuerall in all. 180li

The confession of the L. to his Matie.

After weston was placed in the tower hee met with Mr. Maior Sr: Thom: Ouer: supper and the glasse and asked Mr. Sr: shall I give it him nowe, wherein I protest unto your Mty. my ignorance as I would alsoe be gladd to protest the same to the world. So I privately conferred with your Mty and by this meanes made him assured unto mee and knew all but dissuaded him, and as Weston hath confessed the death of Sr. Tho: Overb: confessed to mee that the glyster was his owne throwe, and the Apothecary had 20li for administring it. I rest Mty Most loyall Servt Francis Mosham.

Here the Lord Chiefe Justice observed by this question of west. to the L shall I give it him now, that it was yesterday agreed and plotted before what should be done, and that nothing more was doubted on, but the tyme when it should bee done.

The testimony of Laurence Dawes taken before Cooke and Crewe

Hee affirmeth that Weston deliuered him a letter from Sr: Tho: Overb: to Rochester, the effect whereof was in that hee should doe his endeavour in bring a meanes of freendshipp betweene Rochester and some others, but as touching the marriage with the countes of Essex hee would neuer give his consent. and also bringing a letter from Roch. to Sr: Thom: Monson hee deliuered to Weston, and a pap of white powder fell out wch Rochester spoake Sr: Thom: to eate and not to feare though it made him sicke. for that should bee a meanes for his enlardgmt. So they put the powder in to the Letter againe. Hee saith that hee same parte of the powder in Westons hands after the death of Sr: Thomas Overs:

The examination of Symon Weston and Paule de La Bell: at the first arraignment

And Giles Rawlins Esquire 15: October. 1615. saith that vppon the brut of poysoninge Sr: Tho: Overs: being taxed of diuers for that hee stirred not in his matter &c: Thom: being his kinsman, and meanes of his preferrment. hee did of himselfe preferr a petition to bring, that the cause might be referred to the Judges of the Law for ordinary course of Justice, rather then to the Lords of the Councell, by them to be examined wch he had a grauious answere and saith

that of 14 dayes before the death of Sr: Tho: Overs:
hee could neuer bee suffred to speake him, either in his
Chamber or at his Windowe, wch Weston said was by
commaund of the Lords and the Lieutenant.

And there the Lord Chiefe Justice declared what a Scandall
they put vppon his Mty. and the state, that a gentleman
and freeman being only committed vppon contempt, shall
more straightly and closely bee kept then a traytour
or bondslaue, soe that neither his father, brother or friend
might possibly see him, and to that poynt Mr. Overburyes
Father to Sr: Thom: sweared being present in Court: who
said that his sonne being prisoner in the Tower and
himselfe non being suffred to haue accesse vnto him soe
at last that Rochest[r] was the man wch wth stood it.

The Lres examinate Octo: 5.

Saith that after the death of Sr: Tho: Overb: Weston told
him that hee was neglected by the Countesse and Dimo
ding his reward Mrs. Turner told him the Countesse
had no money, but afterwards shee confessed shee had receiu
some, and should haue more and that Mr. James told
him my Lord of Somersett would reward him for his pagnes
hee spoke wth Sr: Thom: Overb: hee saith the tarts were
sent from the Countesse to Sr: Thom: wch looked ill fauored
and that fellinge wth a little standing would be sweete and
thinketh they were poysoned.

Also Weston tould him that the Apothecary had 2li for
giuing the glister and that hee was poysoned wth that
glister. Here was alsoe obserued by the Counte ad by the
Queenes Attorney, that Weston was not single in his confes

But whensoever hee had confessed any thinge in any of his examinations, it was likewise confirmed by the examinatio of others, as the L. his sonne.

The examination of Wm Goze one of the sheriffs of London.

Saith weston being in his custody hee often perswaded him to putt himselfe to be tried by his country, telling him hee would first tell himselfe and afterwards aske God forgiuenes, and weston answered hee hoped hee hoped they would not make a nett to catch little birds and lett the greates one goe/

Then Mr Ware craueing leaue of the Court to speake, protests in his experience, hee neuer found a busines persecuted wth so many degrees, wch were the grounde of Sr: thom: Ouers ouerthrowe, hee vrged the euidence in the examination of Sr: David Wood, and shewed the reasons the reasons of the malice against him to bee for that hee was so great an impedmt. to affections. then hee made the dependancie Mrs Turner had to the Lady, and weston to Mrs Turner and how the all concluded to plot: Sr: thom: Ouer: the like whereof o[u]r fathers neuer saw before vs, and hee lamented much the place from whence the poyson came, should be from the Court, the place (said he) from whn all men exact their safeties and protection. /

Lastly he obserued the finger of God in this that poyson had scarce beene suspected at all, or inquired after, had it not beene for the extraordinary straung things appearing after his death wch the first only cause of suspition and mutteringe. /

The euidence being / giuen weston was demaunded what hee could say for himselfe, who although he had before confessed all his examinations, to bee true yet hee seemed to excuse himselfe

In a kind of ignorance or vnawares, her said her receaued the
said glasse from the Countesse, from whome (indeed sh
was sent) her confessed it was to saue his Child, and
finally he could say nothing that had any colour of
materiall or substantiall poynte to excuse or ~~ex~~ argue
innocency in him, so the Courte referred him to the Iury
who went together and wthin short space returned, being
agreed vpon there verdict and there at the barr gaue
that Weston was guilty of the felonious murthering and
poysoning of Sr: Tho: Ouerb: and then the Clearke of
the crowne demaunded of Weston what her could say for
himselfe, why Iudgmt should not her pronounced against him
according to Law, to wich he aunswered her referred him
selfe to my Lord and the country, and then the Lord Chiefe
Iustice before he pronounced sentence of death spake to
this effect. that for the duety of the place, he must say
somewhat and that to two seuerall ptons. first to the Iuries
and secondly to the prisoner and that wch her spake to
the auditory her deuided into 4 partes.

1. The manifestion of the glory of God, and honor of the kyng
2. The preventing of other damned ~~Dey~~ murthers and poysoning
3. An aunswere to certaine obiections.
4. That there is no practice of Conspiracy in the pseution of
the busines.

1. for the first her obserued, the finger of God, in the manifestac
and bringing to light of this matter, haning slept two years
being shadowed wth greatnes wch cannot ouercome the eye
of people. he obserued also the prouidence and goodnes

of God to put in the harts of himselfe and the harts of the
Judges, the day of the last arraignment. when the prisoner
stood mute, not to give judgt against him for that tyme
but defer till now, and how in the meane tyme it pleased
his Mty. out of his gracious care and pitie to send to the
prisoner first the bishopp of London, next the bishopp
of Ely, to admonish, and p̄swade him, for the saving of
his soule, who, after each of them had spent tow howres
wth him and when all the meanes of man and prayinge
wth him, yt pleased God (when they had left) to move his
harte, so that now he putt himselfe to be tried by the
Countrie by wch meanes (vsing wordes one wordes) he
said the great fliess shall not escape but receave their
punishmt. for conclusion of this p. poynte he lastly observed
Diuinū quiddam in vulgi opinione for that so many vncertaine
rumoures touching this case, at last it proved true/
Secondly, he declared how for prevention of this damned
crime of poysoning justice was the goulden meane, and declared his Matys resolution strictly to execute justice for that
treason, and here vsed this saying. Nemo prudens and desired
God that this p̄sident ouer: might be an example and
terrour against this horrible crime and therefore it
might be called the great oyer of poysoninge./

3 Thirdly he said, that at the arraignt were certaine
Criticks put, who had given out the prisoner shall denie
his examinations, and found so much fault for that these
examinations were read (the prisoner standing mute) but
for for the first how vntrue it was all the world saw
the prisoner here confessing them all being read and
shewed vnto him, and for the second besides that it was

Exceeding offensive and convenient the world should vera
satisfaction in a cause of that nature) hee cited and
shewed, that by the law of the lands they ought and
were bound to doe notwithstanding the greatness of any
might there by be impeached, of whom hee said that
although this was vnicum crimen yet it was not vnicum
crimen.

Fourthly as touching the supposed practice or conspiracy
hee solemnly protested to God hee knew of none, or any
semblance or collour thereof, and therefore he much
vaid
wished, against the lightnes and vnworthines of such
as went about so vntruly and wickedly to slaunder
the course of Justice, and so hee came last of all
to that wch hee had to speake of vppon the prisoner.

First touching the wickednes of his fact, hee very seriously
exhorted him, to an vnfained confession, and contrition
for the same, declaring vnto him, how that this
confession would be a satisfaction to the world by offence,
God and the world if by faith and true repentance, hee
would lay hould vppon the merits of his Saviour.
Hee perswaded him that no vaine hope (wch is a rock) should
keepe him back from giving satisfaction to the world by discovering the
giltines of the great one, assuring him that after this life,
as death left him, so Judgment should finde him.

And lastly taking occasion there to remember this poysoning to have
been a popish trick, wch hee instanced by example of one
Gurnandus de Birlemos mentioned .22.8. 1 Edward that
attempted to poyson Queene Elizabeth. Saddle Lopez. and M.
Turner, and proceeded to give judgment, wch was that

The prisoner should bee carried from thence to the place from whence shee came and from thence to Tyborne, there to be hanged by the neck till shee were dead. /

Judgt: being given, the Lord cheife Justice commaunded that the prisoner might haues convenient respite and the company of some learned godly men to instruct him for his soules health. /

The Arraignment of Anne Turner widow at the Kinges bench bare at westminster 7 Nouem: 1615.

The indictment whereupon Rich: Weston tooke his tryall being reuealed verbatim, shee was indicted for comforting aiding and assisting the said Weston in the poysoning to death the said: Sr: Thom: Ouerb: to wch shee pleaded not guilty, putting herselfe vpon God and the Country, whereupon a very sufficient Jury, of 2 knights. and the rest esquiers and free-holders of Midds. were sworne and impannelled for the triall whereof Sr: Thom: Fowler was foreman. /

The Lord cheife Justice told her that women must be couered in the Church, but not when they are arraigned, and so caused her to put of her hatt, wch done shee couered her haire with her handkercher, being before dect in her haire, and her hatt ouer it. /

Sr: Lawren: Hide the Queenes Attorney opened the matter much to th' effect as hee did at Westons arraignment, shewing the wickednes and haynousnes of poysoninge, hee shewed further that there was one Doctor Foreman dwelling in Lambeth, who dyed very sodainly, and a little before his death, desired that hee might be buried very deepe in the ground, or elce, (said he) i shall feare you all. To him in his life time often resorted the Countesse of Essex and Mrs Turner calling him father, their cause of comming to him was, that by force of magick, hee should procure the Kinge of Somersett. then Viscount Rochester

To Loue her, And Sr. Arthur Mainwaring to loue Mrs. Turner
whome (as it was there related) there had 3 children, after
this busines the countesse of Essex, wrott 2 Letters, one to Mrs. Tu
an other to Doctor Foreman, as followeth.

The Countesse To Mrs. Turner.

burne this letter.

Sweet Turner I am out of all hope of any good in this world for
my Father and my mother and my brother said I should be w
him, and my brother Stanard was here, and said her would not co
from this all this winter, so that all comfort is gon, and wch
is worst of all, my Lord hath complayned that her hath not
Layen wth mee and I would not suffer him to vse mee my
Father and mother are angrie, but I had rather be a lookt
ouer for besids the suffering, I shall Loose his loue, If I
wth him I will neuer desire to see his face more and
if my Lord doe that vnto mee. my Lord is afwell assu
her was, for as you may see in what miserable case I
you send the Doctor word of all her sent mee would
should bee well, but I shall not be so happie as the bed
to loue mee, as you haue taken paines for mee all this
time, so now doe all you can, for neuer so vnhappie as
now, for I am not able to endure the miseries that
coming on mee, but I cannot bee happie as long as the
man liueth. therefore pray for mee, for I haue need
but I should bee better if I had your mind com to any to ease
my mind, lett him know this ill newes if I can
gett this done, you shalt haue as much money as you
demaund, this is faire play.

Yr sister Fran: Essex.

A Letter from the Countesse of Essex
to Doctor Foreman.

Sweet father I must still crave yᵉ love although I hope
I have it and shall deserve it better hereafter, the member
the Galls, for I have though I have yet no cause but to
be confident in you, yet I desire to have it as it is remayning
yet well, so continue it still if it bee possible and if you can you
must find mee some good fortune, alasse I have needs of it bee
the Lord still to mee, for that I desire: and be carefull you
name mee not to any body, for wee have so many spies
that you must use all yᵉ witts, and all little enough, for
the world is against mee and the heavens favour mee not
only happy in yᵉ love I hope you will doe me good, and if the
ungratefull, lett all mischiefe come unto mee, my Lord is lusty
and merry, and drinketh with mirth, and all the content
he gives mee is, to abuse and use mee as doggedly as before
I thinke I shall never bee happie in this world, because hee
hinders my good, and will ever I thinke, remember (I beg
for Gods sake) and get mee from this vile place.

yᵉ affectionate louing daughter
ffrances Essex.

Give Turner warning of all things but not the Lord. I would
not have any things come out for feare of my Lord treasurer
for so they may kill my father and mother, and all theire
cause fall of tayles/

There was also shewed in Court certaine pictures of a man
and a woman in copulation made in lead, and also a mould
in brasse wherein they were cast in black searse also full of
whites & crosses wth Mrs. Turner had in her custody at the
shewing of this and inchaunted paperes and other pictures in
Court there was heard a crack from Scaffolds, wch cause a great

Feare tumult and confusion among the spectators and throw
out the dark, every one fearing hurt, as if the diuell had ben
ꝑsent and growen angrie to haue his workmanshipp shewed
by such as were not his owne scholers, and this terrible comotion
about a quarter of an howre after silence proclaimed, the
rest of the cunning tricks were likewise shewed. Doct. Foreman
wife being administratrix of her husbands found letters in
packetts, by wch much was discouered, shee was courte and
deposed. That Mrs. Turner came to her house immediatly
after her husbands death and did demaund certaine packetts
certaine pictures wch were her husbands study, namely one
picture in wax very lumphowsly appareled in silke and
sattine, as also one other fitting in the forme of a naked
woman spreading, and laying forth her haire in a crisped
looking glasse, wch Mrs. Turner did confidently affirme
bee in a box, and that shee knew in what parte or room
of the study they were.

Mrs. Foreman further deposeth, that Mrs. Turner and her husband
would bee some tymes 3 or 4 houres locked vpp in his study
togeather, shee did depose further, that her husband had an
eyen like a watch.

There was also a note shewed in Courte made by D. Foreman and
written in pearchment signifying what Ladyes loued what
Lords in the Courte, but the Lord chiefe justice would not
suffer it to bee read openly in courte.

Mrs. Turner sent Margarett her maid to Mrs. Foreman. and
wished that all such letters and papers as concerned the
Earle of Somersett. or the Countesse of essex or any other
great psonages should be burnt telling her that the kings
warrant should come to search his study, and that all his goods
might be seized, whereupon shee and her maid Margarett wth

The consent of Mrs. Foreman but duises letters and papers,
but that shee kept some wth out their privity.

There were also enchantmts shewed in Court written in
parchiamts wherein were contained all the names of the
~~names of the~~ blessed Trinitie mentioned in the scriptures
and in other pchiamts + . B . + . C . + . D . + . E . in a
third likewise in pchiamts were written also the names
of the holy Trinitie as also a figure in wch was written ~~all~~
~~the names of the holy Trinity~~ this word xps. and vppon the
pchiamts was fastned a little peece of the skinne of
a man.

In some of these pchiamts the devills had particular names
who were conjured to torm. the Lord Somerset. and Sir
Arth: Mayn warning, if there lives should not continue
th'one to the Countesse th other to Mrs. Turner. Mrs. Turner
also confessed that D. Savoys was vsed in the suffion after
Foreman and practised many secret sorceries vpon the
backe of effex his pson.

Mrs. Turner being kept close prisoner in a manner in one
of the sheriffs of London before shee was brought to the
barr, knew not that Weston was executed, but by the reading
having vnderstanding thereof, and hearing duers examinats
read, in so much dyected her that in a manner shee spake
nothing for herselfe, also examinations and witnesses viva
voca that were produced at ye arraign. and duers others now
read againe, as the examinations of one Edw: Layne John
Swift, Robert: freema, Lyncox, Rawlins, Layton & Willias and
of this examinations gave evidence, that one Franck his kinsman
an Apothecary & druggister was evided of all the poysons
given to Sr. Tho: Ouer.

A Chirurgion there deposed, that hee cured Franckin of the
pox, and that at seuerall tymes hee demaunded of this Chirurgion
what was the strongest powder or poyson, the Chirurgion knew
of him w^hat he would doe w^th it T. replies nothing but w^t
his experience and ~~to~~ by conclusions.

An other examinac̃on of one Mercer who had conference w^th the
said Fran. called him Cosen, who demaunded of th'examinate
what newes, hee answeres, I heare ill newes that my Lord
Lord and M^rs Somr is found insufficient and not able to content
the Lady, T. replies I haue a hand in that busines, I haue
a great kind of my Lady Essex shee allowes mee 30^s a
day for my boathire and 40^s a weeke for my Diett. I
could haue any money I would. Mercer replies but
Cosen how can God blesse you in this busines, T. answeres,
Lett them talke of God, w^ch cause ~~to~~ doe w^th him, My
Lord of Somer. and the Countesse will beare mee out in
any thing I doe, if you haue any suit wherein you may
doe you selfe some good, and I may gaine by it, I will
warrant you I will gett it.

Francis deposeth, that Fran: married his sister and that hee
thinketh in his conscience shee was poysoned, and that vppon
some discontents hee heard him say he would be hanged
for a meaner a whore or Queane of them all.

The Lord Chiefe Iustice made a speech vppon diuers speeches
there read, that the Earle of Somsett gaue directions that
of the powder he sent to Quee: that w^ch should be left
should bee brought backe againe. his plea that it was
w^ch should be the ground to make the King graunt his
Liberty. (saying further) it would doe Quee: good, and hee
had Tarts and Jellies sent him him likewise by the

Countesse, wth expresse commaund wt that none must eate of them
but Sr: Thom: saying that they would doe him no harme
At an other tyme the countesse sent Tarts and jellies and
wyne, with directions that those wch had formerly sent
should be brought back againe, and those late brought
should bee given him at supper and then all should
bee well. but directions given at ~~supper and then all~~
~~should be well~~ that Nether the Lieft. nor his wife
might eate of them but they might drinke of the wyne
for in the tarts and jellies there might bee fees, but
in the wyne there might bee none and afterward it
was openly declared and proued by diuers examinations
that those words fees, were a ground betweene the
countesse and Lieft. and Weston to giue notice what things
were poysoned and what not.

In the examinatio that was of Weston, it was related that
Mr. James, told him that the Earle his Mte would pay
him for his paines about Sr: Thom: Ouerb:

Then the Lord Cheife justice gaue in charge to the Jury
concerning the euidence they had formerly heard and
told them that Weston at his examinatios confessed
that all hee had said formerly was true.
Hee further related, what a great vexation and greefe
it was to the King that Somersett only by making vse of
his fauour and loue, so foule a fact was done, as first
to be th occasion of putting Sr. Thom: Ouer: to employ
for the embassage of Russia. Second ly to make him refuse
the same, and to giue right cause for his comitt.

thirdly to feare him in hand, that hee would worke his
Liberty, but still aggreuated and labored contrary, and gaue
direction, to the Leift. of the towre to Looke to him surely
and to keepe him close prisoner and that hee should speak
none of his freinds, or they to him vrging great matter
against him. /

Sr: Tho: Monson was often employed to giue directions to the
L. therein wch was a most barbarous course to see so
dealt wth all only for a contempt concluding that a
was a close prisoner to all his freinds, but open to all
his enemyes, such as Somerset would haue, or send vnto
him. /

Then the Lord cheife Justice told Mrs. Turner that shee had
the seauen deadly sinns. viz. a whore a Baude, a sorcer
a witch a papist a felone, a murtherer, the daughter
of the deuell, for man wishing her to repent and to
come a feruent to Jesus Xps and to pray to him to cast
of her those 7 deuells. /

shee desired the Lord. ch. Just. to bee good vnto her, saying
shee was euer brought vp wth the countesse of Somerset
and had beene of long tyme her serut. and knew not that
there was poyson in any of those things sent to Sr: Thom:
Ouer:

Then they jury went forth and not long after returned and
her Guilty, who being asked what shee could say for herself
why Judgmt should not bee pronounced against her shee
desired fauour, but could not speake any thing for weeping

Then Judge Crooke made an other speech exhorting her
to repentance and to prepare herselfe ready for death
and that little time wch should be assigned to her to

Lives shee should not spend it other in labour & in imagination to gett life for that hope was but a witch. Upon conclusion of which speech hee gave judgmt and told her shee had a very honourable triall by such men as her had not seene in this time for one of the rancke and quality, and so was delivered to the shreiffe.

Upon the Wensday following her was brought from the shreiffs in a coatch to Newgate, and was there putt into a Cartt and casting money often among the people as shee went shee was carried to Tyborne where shee was executed, and whether many men and women of fashion came in Coaches to see her dy, to whom shee made a speech, desiring them not to rejoice at her fall, but to take example by her shee exhorted them to serve God, and abandon pride and all other sinns relating her breeding with the Countesse of Somersett, having had no other meanes to maintaine her children and herselfe but what came from the said Countesse, and said further that when her hands was once in this business, shee knew the revealing would be her overthrow: the wch with others like speeches and penitence, shee shewed, moved the spectatours to great pitie and great griefe for her.

The proceeding against Sr: Jervis Helwish: Lieft. of the tower at his arraignt at Guild hall. 16 Novembr. 1615.

The forme of the Indictment was the malicious abetting comforting and assisting of Weston, in the poysoning and murthering of Overb: whereupon it was laid against him as followth.

First when Weston receaued the viall of poysonings of 2 inches long to giue S^r: Thom: hee hauing the glasse in one hand and breath for S^r: Thom: in the other hand meeting the L. asked him thus, S^r: shall I giue it him now, the L. receaued him, yet that might hee giue him in his breath. ergo the Lrd. knew of the practice and poysoning of S^r: Thom: Overb: Et qui non propulsat injuriam cum possit infert. Cicero /.

After this was knowen to be poyson, yet hee kept Weston still, he fauoured, countenanced, and graced him, and one tyme sent him a cupp of sack and bad his man tell him that hee loued him aswell as euer hee did: & thus whilst he payd him no wages, and as soone as Overb: was dead Weston was remoued. /

The Countesse wrott a letter to the L. with the sweetmeats poysoned vnto Overb: and wrote to the L. wife and bad him giues the vnto Overb: for there was Lees in them, but his wife and children might demand of the wyne, for shee was sure there was noe Lees in it /

The Earle of Northton wrott a letter to the L concerning the imprisonment of S^r: Thomas Overb: and the said Earle wrott 2 Lett: to Rochester concerning these words. /

Sweet Lord think not that I finde payne in that wch delights mee most, wch is any thing that falles from yᵉ pen. three things concurre to my exceeding joy in yᵉ worthy lette, proofe of yᵉ love, comfort in yᵉ words and iudgmt. in yᵉ writing, you may (believe the words of him that never flattered) my heart is full of love of you, yᵉ characters are no payne for mee to reade, being as well acquainted wth yᵉ hand as my owne, the paine is no more then cracking a nutt for the kernell or my neerest payne in the silver dropping stream of yᵉ penne. there the Lord Chiefe Iustice left of reading for the hardnes of it that after in the letter followed. I spent 2 houres yester day in perusing the L wch cautions, considerations, observing wth whome it is to deal that hee might the better act his parte, for the adventure wch hee raiseth. /

Henry Northton.

Another letter to Rochester.

Sweet Lord I cannot deliver unto yᵉ wth what cautio & consideratio &c. and the Lrd. looking to his business wch concernes no more then text affoards that marched in his affaires I shall hould him discreet and loves him better whilst I live for this his conclusion, for this Negro can no more change his skinne then a Leopard his spotts.

Henry Northton.

Another to Rochester.

Sweet Lord, Overb. being viewed, there was found in his armes an yssue and on his belly 2 kernells, likely to breed to yssue, and each as broad as inside and as bigg as a small button on yssue on his back, wth a lawnen plaster

On it this was strange and vglie how shee stuck in to clear all in so much as how wast cast into the coffin wth a Cloth sheet over him, god is gracious in cutting of all in them from of the factions Crew, if he had comforth they m[ight] have made vse of him, thus sweet Lord, wishing yᵉ att[ainment] encreasse of happines and honour I end.

yᵉ Lopᵖ more then any Mans

Servt: Nor[thumberland].

The Lieftt. wrott a letter to the Lieft. to the Earle of [illegible] certifying him that hee vndertooke Sr. Tho: Ouer. and to his instructions that assoone as hee came to the place [illegible] Sr Thom: & tested his innocency vppon the bible, and the (quoth he) hee asked mee what they ment to doe w[ith] him I answered the meane to reste me you that yᵉ princes may appeare a little better. After I walked w[ith] him in his Chamber and advised him to giue way to the match betweene Rochester and the countesse but this grew hott against yᵉ Lordship and the counter somewhat saying if hee were the Countesse of Sᵗ prisoner [illegible] he thought hee was then said hee left her know, that I care as litlly to dy, as shee to bee cuckold the Count I find to bee joyned wth you in this plott though the Chamberlaine knowes not of it nor any on elle but [illegible] yacke I shall most feare, vntill I see the event to bee clearly conteird, and so hee concluded the letter

yᵉ Lopᵖ to commaund

Jesuj Helwash

The answeare of Sr:
Jesuj Helwash to the poynts proposed.
My Lord before before I answeare to the matᵗ of charge against mee, lett mee remember yᵉ Lordship of one speech

wch I learned from yt Lop owne mouth. I have heard you speake it at the Councell Table and you have delivered it at th' assizes in the country. that when a prisoner stands at the barr for his life, comforters allowed no Counsell but strong Counsell against him, perchaunce affrighted with the feare of death, his wife & children to be thrust out of doores: and made to seeke their bread, you have allwayes pitied the case of such an one, you have desired yt had rather hang in hell for mercy to such an one, then for Judgmt. /

My Lord you have not observed yr owne rule in my Cause, you have paraphrased upon every examinatio, you have aggravated every evidence and applied it to me, for that I stand clearly condemned, before I bee found guilty if I bee so vile a man as yt Lop conceaves me I were unworthy of any favor, but I hope my Lop shall not finde it. /

So I will deny nothing that hath evidence against me & will not tell a ly to save my life and I beseech yt Lop to conceave of me, & use yt charitie towards me I.

Then I cried he the Court that the heads of th accusations might be collected by the Councell of the King wch were the same that were mentioned before, to wch I see severally answered /

To the first. shall I give it him now? he answered, that when Weston asked him the question, he saw no poyson in his hand, and therefor (said he) in yor Lors and myne examinations, the Question was: shall I give it him now not shall I give him it now. for this a great difference betweene hoc & id: in matter of pr vention /

But further when Weston had told me, that it was poyso
wch her meant to give Q very roundly him, and beat him
downe wth Gods judgmts nay I humbled him so, that vpon
his knees he thanked God and me, and told me that
and his had cause to blesse God for me for that I
wth held him from doing that act, and if you calle this
Comforting and abetting to reverse a man for his synn
and to make him to confesse his fault to God, and to
abhorre and detest the act, then was I an abettor &
Comfortour of Weston.

To the 2. after I had thus terrified Weston wth Gods judgm
and saw him cast downe for his offence: I could doe no better
office, then of Charitie to raise him vp againe, who was so
cast downe and therefore favoured him, I shewed him kindn
I drank to him, to the intent I might encourage th'intent
of his mind, wch I found then resolved in abhorring the fact
and for that I gave him no wages. It is true i tooke him
from the comendatio of my Lord: Northton and Sr: Thom: Mo
whome I tooke to be my freind, and thought they would
comend no man to be a keeper wch might any way endan
mee.

To the 3. I never knew any other meaning of the Countesse
words in her letters but the have a litterall meaninge, and
sure (quoth she) after I had receaved the tarts, and they
had stood a while in my kitchin, I saw them so black and fo
and of such strange colour that I did cause my Cooke to
throw them away, and to make other tarts and fetch

To the 4 she said, the Earle of Northton's Letter tooke
was not any thing touching the poysoning of Overbury
but a close restraint, to the end that Over: might agree

To their purpose concerning the marriage to be had
betweene Rochest^r. and the countesse. If the Earle of
Northton had any other plott to take away his life I
was not any thing of his Councell, or had knowledge therin/

To the 5^th. whereas it is said I receaued him according
to my instructions, I meane none other thing, then I
haue delivered before, w^ch was concerning the closnes
of his imprison^mt. but being asked by these words what
he meant Rochesters parte I shall greatly feare, vntill
I see the event clearly to be carried/

In this her staggered and wauered much and gaue this
answere, it was long since her writt to him this letter,
and for the p^ticular circumstances that inducted mee
to this speech I cannot now call to memory, but sure
I am if that at that time (knowing my selfe to be
innocent) I could the better haue satisfied my
remembrance, so that I meant nothing concerninge the
taking away of his life, but because I was a stranger
to Roch. and heard heere and knewe of that great
league that was betweene Overb: & Rochest: I might
well thinke, suspect, and feare what her would al-
wayes continue those effects, for his restraint. these
were the answeres hee made to his accusationes, and
after her had made many protestations betweene
God and his soule, so his innocencie in the malicious
plottinge and abbetting of Overb: death hee appeale
himselfe to the Jury and told them thus./

I will prove vnto you by many infallable and vnanswerable
reasons, that I could not bee aidour and complotter with
Weston in this poysoning. first I made a free and voluntary
discovery of it my selfe, I was not compelled, will any
man imagine, that I would discover 2 things whereby
I could not cleare my selfe? nature is more kind then
to be its owne accuser. /

Besids that my clearnes might more appeare and remayne
in the world without any suspition, I proceeded and accused
the murtherer Weston, it had beene a fondles and obscure
thing in mee (if I had not thought my self cleare) to
haue accused him, who might haue donn mee much
hurt mee. /

Nay Weston himselfe proved mee to bee an honest man before
the Chancellour of the exchequer for hee confessed to
him and to others being present that he thought the L.
knew not of the poysoning and in his examination before
the L. cheif Just. and Serj Crew being asked the meaning
of theise words (shall I give it him now) hee answered
that hee thought the L. knew not of the poysoning. and
in that examinacon before L. C. Justice & Serjeant Crew being
asked the meaning of theise words. shall I give it
him now he answered thought that those wch had given
him one worde, had acquainted the L. wth their practise.

Also I was so confident in myne owne innocency that I
tould my Lord ch. Justice and my Lord Coke the way
to make Weston confesse and discover all wch was by
faire and gentle intreat of him, and soe by this meanes
they might search the bottome of his heart in this
the L. C. Just. witnessed wth him. /

And after Sr: Thom: Ouer: was dead, Weston and Mr. Turner were sent to me to knowe whether I had any inckling of the death of Sr. Tho: what need I haue I the of this guilt if I had known any thing thereof. /

Also that wch I doe know concerning the poysoning: of Sr: Thom: was after his death by the relation of Wade and I am heere indicted as necessary before the fact, when I knew nothing till after the fact. /

After hee had confirmed these reasons by sundrie words, proofes and witnesses hee went further in his owne defence if I bee in the plott the L. Treasurer is I haue his letters to shew in it hee called mee to his lodginge, and said the plotte you knowe them allwell as I: the plotte were only to repaire hee honour. my wife hathe the Letters from my Lord Treasurer and Monson, for this plotte I will runne willingly to my death, if circumstances bee knitt with any manner of fact. /

Hee proceedeth further I told the L. Justice, that hee spake not this to justifie himselfe, so that no staine or blemishe might drawe vnto him, for (said hee) this visitation is sent mee from God, and whether I liue or dy it is the heyest affliction to my soule that I euer receaued, I laid vppon my hart for blood guiltines, I haue not repented mee otherwise then for errours of my Iudgmt in not detecting what I Iuspected, and yet I aske god for giuenes for offe fiue sinns euery day, but of this I know not other then grosse Iudgmt of my errours in not preuenting it when I saw such intendmt and imaginacons against him. /

Then he putt my L. cheife justice this case. If one that not of
any plott to poyson a man, but only suspects th is no actor
contriveur himselfe, only imagineth such a thing, whether
such a man bee accessary to the murther. for the words
of the Judgmt are abbetting and comforting wth malice
now if there bee any man, that chardge mee expressly
or in direct termes, that I was an abbettour or if the
Court shall thinke in this case wch I have putt that
a concealing wthout malice, is an abbetting, I refuse
not to dy I am guilty. this was them sommer of his
speech.

Then th' L. C. J. replied, that to his knowledge hee spake no more
concerninge th' evidence, then hee could in conscience justifie,
was only to explaine th' evidence of things, and not wrest
any thing in prejudice of his life.

But further hee tould him that 2 dayes before Sr. Thomas
died, you wished his man to bring in his best suit of
hangings to hange his chamber, wch you knew were
foes. after hee tould that this accusation of Lord Treasurer
was very malicious for in th' examinations hee had taken,
in all the exact searching hee could not find that hon. gentleman
touched by any. In conclusion hee told him, it was not yet
deepe protestations now yt appealing to God and his throne,
that can sway a Judge from heare evidence, wch is not yet
answered unto.

Butt to leave you wthout excuse and to make the matter as cleare as may
bee heere is the confession of Franck lin (wch hee then drew
of his bosome saying) this poore man not knowing Sr. Jervis
should come to his death, this morning hee came unto mee
6 of the clocke and found mee that hee was much troubled in his conscience
and could not rest all night untill hee had made his confession, and
it is such an one (these were his words) as the eye of England

The confession of James Franckline
16. Nouemb: 1615.

Mrs Turner cam to mee from the Countesse, and wished mee to gett the strongest poyson I could for Sr: Thom: Ouer: accordingly I bought 7. Aqua fortis, white Arsnick. Mercury. powder of Diamonds, Lapis costitus great spiders cantaradas: all these were giuen Sr: Thom: at seuerall tymes. And further confessed the Ld: Few of these poysons for that appeareth (saith he) by many letters wch hee wrote to the Countesse of Essex wch I saw and therefor knew that hee knew of this matter, one of the letters I read to Countesse because shee could not read it her selfe in wch the Ld: vsed this speech. Maddam, this sickness is like the Fox, the more hee is curssed, the better hee faireth, and many other speeches.

Sr: Tho: Ouer: neuer eate white salt but there was white Arsnick putt into it, once hee desired pigg, and Mrs Turner putt in Lapis costitus.

The white powder that was sent to Sr: Tho: in a letter, hee knew to bee white Arsnick. a very dead ly poyson.

At an other time hee had 2. Partridges sent him from the Courte, and water & onions bing the sauce, Mrs Turner in stead of pepper but in Cantaradas, so that there was scarce any thing that hee did eate but that there was some poyson in it. for this poysons th Countesse sent mee rewards shee mett many times gould by Mrs Turner.

shee afterwards went vnto mee to buy her more poysons, I went to her and told her, I was weary of it and besought her vpon my knees, that shee would vse mee no more in those matters, but shee importuned mee, bad mee goe, and inticed mee with faire speeches and rewards, so shee ouercame mee and bewitch mee.

The cause of this poysoning, as the Countesse tould mee was
because Sr. Thom: Exer: would give so sower in to the fire, as
her would put them downe. /
Her did also say that that the Nothles Maid, Mrs. Turner
was acquainted with the poysoninge, so was Mrs. Turner
man Keuen, so also Mrs Horne the Countesse owne Woma
Her sayth on the marriage day of the Countesse w^th Somerset
Sr. first 20^li by Mrs Turner and her was to have beene
paid by the Countesse 200^li during his life. /
That he was urged and lurked 200 severall tymes at the
by the Countesse to doe it against his conscience her
saith shee was able to be with any man and then
he wrought the love betweene Rochester and her and
that her had 12 severall tres from her to Sr. Thom
and was to have C.C^li to continue their loves unto
the marriage, and that all things were executed
the first discovery. /
These were all materialls in Franckins confession to the
Sr: Jervis knew not what to answere, or to make of
his owne letters. /
Then ?
Then p^sently the Jury departed from the barr, and shortly
after returned and found him guilty, and the L. Ch.
J. gave judgmt. and her was executed at Tower Hill
accordingly in manner followinge. /

Sr: Jervis his confession: /

On Monday 20. November: 1615. her was executed at Tow
hill upon a Scaffold there fitt of purpose about six of
the clocke in the morning and being arrayed in a black
suit and black Jerkin, with hanging sleeves, and haire

one his head a crimson satten cappe, lased from the topp towards, and round about vnder that a white ~~lynnē~~ lawne cappe with a border ouer that a black hatt wth a broad ribben and ruffed band thicke corched wth lace, and paire of two soled shooes./

Hee came vnto the Jebbett from sheriffe Goares house betweene doctor Whitings and Doctor Aylon two of his Mtys chapleyns and comming to the Ladders foote, hee talkt a word or two to the executioner./

Then hee went vp the Ladder. 4 or 5 steppes the executioner sitting on his head vppon the Jebbett &c: perceiuing the ladder to stand too vpright for his ease, spake to haue it amended wch forthwth (hee comming downe) was done, being fastened vppon the ground and then he went vpagaine 6 steppes, where after a while sitting easily, hee vttered words to this or the like effect./

Noble right worth and others I am here come accordg to explaine and vnfould that wthout the tyme of myne arreignt to so many of you as were p'sent as also to shew that then I perceiued I had lost the good opinio of many in standing so long vppon my innocencie wch was my fault I confesse, hoping now to recouer the same and ye good charitable opinions of mee, wch fault I then saw not, being blinded wth mine excuses, wch made mee accompt it no sinne./

But sithe my condemnatio by meanes and helpe of this two gentlemen here p'sent the two Doctors, I was p'suaded of the greatnes of my sinne, and that it was so much the greater by how much the more I did conceale it wch (by Gods mercy) I perceiuing, consulted not wth flesh and blood, but thought it in this my condemnatio my best

way for my Soules wealth to reveale to the omnipotent
all seeing God, the most secrett and inward intentions
thoughts of my dearly full hart not once regarding the
praise, or dispraise of the world, wch I regard not at all

It may bee some will say, that this place was much
unfitt for my execution, appointed to terrifie and daunt me
so much the more, but (alas) I feare not death you
nor any such like things, for I accompt it the kings
Councells speciall favour that I did heare for that I
requesting the same it was graunted, whereby I see me
this Tower, late wherein I should have beene called to
state busnesses and still might, if I had performed
a more loyall service to my king and Country than
I did.

Next in that I was not appointed to Tyborne a place of
more publique reproach then now I am brought being
worthy to dy by due, and Lawfull justice in execut-
thys bloody and erroneous act against a kind gentleman
who deserved not ill at my hands, nor at any mans els
for ought I know.

But were it I had not trusted him who was a most spiteful
wretch, I had not fallen into this snare wch may serve
all here present to take heed whom they trust in a bad w
& to admonish you that are trusted, never to breake
and just fidelity.

I was by divers tricks Drawen to this action, wch I receaved
from the Earle of Northton: and Sr: Thomas Monson, and
none other, but last I remembred the 115e verse: Psal me.
119, and sayd with that holy Prophet, Away from me

yee wicked, for I will keepe the commaundmts of my God. then had I refused such like tricks, alas now to late, there was my fault, that I did not refuse them, and cast my selfe vppon Gods providence, wth owt any dependance one man, though neuer soe honourable was euer any deceaued that did trust in god, there was neuer any.

Therefore I admonish you all, lett none how honourable soever he be or the king himselfe move you to any thing, not agreeable to Gods word, doe it not, reject it for this this was my fault, that I had not at the first opened this plott to his Mty. who no doubt, would most justly and wroughly haue punished the same.

ye rolls, wor, and others, lett my example teach you this much, that you prophane not the holy Sabaoth of the lord nor his good creatures, nor that ye turne by a lasciuious course daies into nights, nights into dayes, as I haue done, and that in seeking god, you must not only read the scriptures, but ioyne practice therewth for what good els will the same effect, if the hart be foule bloody and impure. some here know my forwardnes therin, but I plead not innocency that way, but cast it of, and confesse that of this great assembly I am the most wretched synner.

you expect speeches of mee of some concealed matters, and vppon some of my speeches vsed at the closing vpp of my Arraignt. but I stand here loco precatoris, non oratoris, but yet I will shew ye I haue opened to my L. Ch. Iustice of England [illegible] my arraignt. that wch

To the vttermost of my power I was able to vse
vpon wch then I tooke the body and blood of Jesus
Xes. and in further testimony thereof, I will not
it with my last and dearest breath. /

Nobles and others to see yt sacrs it reioyceth mee wher
you manifest yt loues in granting my request to bee
witnesses of my death. I see a number of my frends
there, there, there; pointing as soe spake who out
of their loues, I intreated to Cesar
death, though ignominious to some, yet to me a bit
cupp, mingled to mee wth Gods mercy, a speciall
thisway to call mee home, whereas hee might haue
away my life by shooting the bridge or some fall
or otherwise and this vnrepented sinne, wch I
no sinne wch such was my blindnesse) had bee
beene damnation to mee for God is just, and the
vnrepentant synner shall no saluation. /
There is none of you presente here, know how or in wh
sort yee shall dy, it may bee in his bed, it may be othe
wise (God knowes) I protest before you all that
I neuer came ouer this bridge, in the chaffest of all
my prosperity wth more ioy, then now I haue wh
this present for I know now that vndoubtedly I
shall beehould the glorious face and sight of my
Creator. /
Take heede and lett my example incite you to feare G
truly & vprightly, before thou hast done feare a
shamefull death ouertake yee as it hath mee, who am
vnworthy of my Parents care in bringing mee vp

It may bee some will say, I have a flinty harte, because I shed no teares my hart is flesh as any. others, and I am as faintly darted to looke death in the face, as any other, because my use hath not beene to shed teares, I cannot now easily except it bee for the losse of some deare friend albeit now my heart beginneth now to melt wth in mee being wounded. wth that the teares stood in his eyes, to see the faces of some thereby, whom (quoth he) I most love, and now must depte wth shame, for worldly regard I respect not, for well Mr Sheriffe knowes that (to shame this my sinfull flesh the more) I wish (if hee had pleased to beene brought from Westminster through the citie to have wardned all spectates how they should not escape wthout judgmt. for blood, for god is just. /

I had almost forgotten, to shew you a most strang thinge wch God brought to my memory the last night wch was this, I confesse I have beene a great gamster, and specially one the other side have wasted and played many sommes of money, wch exhausted a great portion of my meanes wch I receiving vowed seriously, not slightly or unadvisedly to the lord in my bowes and prayers Lord let mee bee hang'd, if ever I play any more wch not longe after is most justly come vppon mee, wherof you are all eye witnesses because 1000 times since I have broke this my vow. /

Then espied hee one Sr: Maximilion Dalyson standing neare the jaboll one horseback, and saw unto him, ye know Sr: Maximilion what gaining was

have had, and how wee have turned daies into nights and
nights into Dayes, I pray you in time to leave it of and
dishonour god no more, by breaking his Saboathes, for
hee hath alwaies enough to punishe you now pre-
sent, who little thought to dy thus: /

To wch Sr: Maximilion answered him: Sr Jervis I am
much greeved for you, and I shall never forget what you
have here said, whereunto Sr: Jervis said, Looke to it and do
then: /

Further hee continued his speech, saying that no man boast
of his abilities and guifts of Nature, wch God giveth him
for therein I displeased God, being tranported with
over much pride of my penne, wch obliquious quill
procured my curse thereon: upon the knitting of my
Lord Cecils Justice speech at myne arraignt. by the reason
of 2 or 3 passages, at the bottome of my letter, subscribed
with my owne hand, wch I utterly had forgotten, because I
felt not the synne wch when I heard, I saw none
other but the fingers of God could thus poynt to the
fact, by this meanes I do protest before God and confesse
before you all that I was so faster and taken with
this bloody fact, that for satisfaction of the same I
willing yeild my dearest blood, to the shame of this my
wretched carkas, not being so much greived for the
same as for others that I with I had hanged in
chaines perpetually, so that I had versated at such
this haynous plot: /

Then should I have saved the lives of some already dead, some in the tower, some in the citie some ouer sea, so should I have preuented many some being widows some from being fatherlesse and some from being childlesse, among whom my owne wife for one, and 8 fatherlesse children of myne, wch I leave now behind mee, and God knowes how many are guilty of this fact, and when it will bee ended. /

The lord chiefe Justice vppon the closing of my speeches at myne arraignment said I was an Anabaptist I would I were as cleare from all other sinnes as from that, for I all waies detested that condition, as for my wife some say shee is a papist, but true it is shee comes so farre from a sincere protestant I meane in that respect, that when shee is amongst papist shee cannot well forbeare them.

Then hee spake to the Sheriffe, saying if it may be permitted wth out offence I have some what to say, and that is this Is it lawfull for any one heere to demaund of one any questions, to wch the sheriffe answered it is not lawfull, wherefore good Sr: Jervis (quoth hee) forbeare, &c: Jervis thereunto said wth nodding his head, it is enough it is enough. /

I have heard (quoth hee) one that holdeth my Cloake, may I bestowe some what of him, the sheriffe answered that you may &c: whereupon hee called the younge man to him by his name, who stood waiting at the Ladders foote, and gave him out of his pocket some peeces of gould or silver. heere take this friend it, wch he wth gladnes receaves

Thankfully receaued, Doctor Whiting and D. Affeton strayned
Curtesy wch of them should begynn a publique prayer fit
for this p'sent condition, one of them willed the other, but
at last D. whiting said. if you sr. Jervis can p'forme it
your selfe, you of all men are fittest to doe wth efficacy both
of soule and spirit. whereunto he said I shall doe my Be
then, put my Heaeres I craue yr charitable instructions, if
wth false woords, and injuricke speeches I rather like

His prayer.

O eternall omnipotent & omniscient God, th creatour of
heaeen & earth, and of mee a most miserable and horrible
wretch, by reason of myne vnmeasureable sinnes & transg
whereof I am wholy guiltie, take pitie one mee who ha
so many ponderous sinnes, that wthout thy especiall favour
and mercy, they will be ready to presse mee downe int
y'petuall distruction. Thy full and free pardon I in Ihu xp
I humbly craue wth that assurance that immediatly my
soule shall bee translated hence into those inexhaustible
joyes wch the heart of man is vnable to conceaue the
tongue to vttre, or the eare to heare, then Lord the petitio
of mee (a most miserable wretch) according to thy promi
made to the repentant sinner my sinnes yea vnknow
and vnrepented wch are my secrett sinnes Lord attend
to accompte, Iffurdon mee O Lord of myne vnknowne
sinnes, I desire to give a true sleight for them. all th
sinnes of my youth, of my riper yeares (O Lord) pardon th
O Lord knowest how many the bee, take the mystic
clouds of all my sinnes whatsoever, bee so scattered
by the bright beames of thy merritts in Christ Jesus o
That those my weake and poore prayers may bee availa

in thy sight this comfort yet I have, that I am thine
for were I not thine, then out of the roots of mee, could
not the goods of repentance appeare by wch I know thou
lovest mee it is not I, but thou Lord hast drawen mee to
thee for thine owne mercyes sake, on wch mercy, and thy
promises made to the true repentant sinner, once again
I rely, for if thou killest mee by this, or any other ignominious
death, yet will I trust in thee, and crave thine assistance
to protect my soule from that great adversary of mine
the diuell who wth pale death and infirmities of
the flesh, doe labour them both together then especially
at the last grasp in wch great conflicte the Lord
strengthen mee that they may not overcome but
bee overcome. Amen.

This prayer beinge ended, he asked if hee might not
pray privately, the D. said yea Sir.

Then made hee a short prayer to himselfe wth his face towarde
and after hee vncouered it and sayd now I have prayed
now I must pay Death last office of Justice: wth that
D. whiting said, M. Jervis: you may stand one step lower
on the ladder, to whome the Sheriffe answered it is
better for him. Mr. Doctor. to see where he is, stay (quoth
the doctor to the executioner he hath given a watch
word, hee is in priuat prayer again, yea (quoth he) I know
that, for hee hath given mee a watch word, when I shall
perceive my office to him.

Hee vncouered his face after this second short prayer,
and first tooke his leave of the assembly, saying wth a
chearefull voice & countenance I pray you pray for mee

Who shall neuer behold your faces more then hee fe
wth great fervency of ~~mine~~ spirit, Lord G dgiue at thy
at hands this bitter cup of death, as the patient
receaueth a bitter Poßion, not once demaunding what is
in the Cupp but takes and drinkes it of Ere it neuer
bitter. /

Affoone then as hee had audiblie said Lord Jesus receau
my soule, wch was the executioners word, hee presentl
turned him ouer the Ladder, and being of the
executioners man, caught hold of one of his feete his own
manne on th' other foote, whereby they sodainly
wayed his life, where hanging a smale distance of the
his body not once stirred only his hands, a little
moued being tied only with a black silke ryban wch
a little before he had reached to th' executioner ryght
vp his hands to him for that purpose, All wch being
ended both Corps and Jebbett, were from thence
remooued. /

The proceeding of James
Franckline at his arraignm.
at the kings bench barr. 27.
Nouem: 1615.

After hee had put himselfe to the country to hys
triall of his life a Jury of Esquires and Gentlem
was impannelled to passe vpon this life then
then Watsons mittimt was read and Franckline acc
accessory to the poysoning of Sr. Thom: Ouerb: and
his examinatio formerly taken in the words /

James Franclin. confession.

has confesseth that in an house neare to the Doctors Commons. Mrs. Turner did first come unto him about the poysoning of Sr. Thom: Overb. and prayed him to give that weech should not kill a man present by, but lye in his body for a certaine time wherewith her might languish away by little and little. At the same time shee gave him fower angells wherewth hee bought a water called aqua fortis, and to Mrs. Turner sent it. The operation thereof gave it to a Catt, how to use wch the Catt languished, and pitifully crying, for the space of two dayes and then dyed.

Afterwards Mrs. Turner sent for Franclin to come to the Countesse, who told him that Aqua fortis was strong and violent a water, but what thinke you (quoth shee) of white Arsnick. hee tould her it was too violent, what say you (quoth shee) to powder of Diamon hee answered I know not the nature of that, shee said then hee was a fool, and gave him a piece of Gould, and bad him buy some powder for her. Franc. demaunded of the Countesse, what was her reason to poyson Sr. Thom: Overb: shee tould him, hee would pry so farre in to the estate, that hee would overthrowe them all.

A little before Sr: Thom: Overb: death, the Countesse sent for Franclin, and shewed him a letter written from the Lord of Roch. wherein hee read these words, I marvaile at this delayes that the business is not yet dispatched, whereby Franclin thinketh in his conscience was meant the poysoning of Sr: Tho: Overb: and in an other letter

From the L. of Rochester was written that Sr. Thom
was to come out of the Towre within two dayes and
they all should bee undone, whereupon the Countesse
sent for à Weston and was very angry with him that
hee had not dispatched Sr. Thom: Ouer: Weston told
her that hee had given him a thing that would
have killed 20 men /.

Also a fortnight after Westons apprehensions, the
Countesse sent for Arnoldin to her house and
Sr. James Parke, where hee found the Earle & the
Countesse walke together, and assoone as hee
came th' Earle went apart into a Chamber
then shee told him Weston had beene sent for
by a pursuant and hath confessed all and wee
shall all bee hanged, but on. yt Like Quoth shee,
doe not you confesse, that you brought any poyson
to mee or Mrs. Turner. For if you doe, shall be hang
for I will not hange for you & with Mrs Turner I
will not be hanged for you both.

The Countesse told him that the Lord who was to
examine him, would promise him a pardon to
confesse, but beleeve him not, for they will hang
him when all is done. R. Weston came to
Sr Tho. house and told him mee now the Countesse
Turner is forced shee vsed him unkindly, and they
should be both poysoned, and that two were sett of
purpose to poy son him /

Franckln having confessed his former examinations vnd ex
his owne hand, being permitted to speake for himselfe,
that at the intreaty of the Countesse and Mrs. turner
hee did buy the poysons but protested his ignorance
what they meant to doe wth them. and for the rest
hee referred to the conscience of the Jury, who went
from the barr and wth a quarter of an howre did returne
and pronounced him guilty. the sr. judge Crooke after a
briefe exhortation, gave the sentence of Death vppon
him.

The Lord. C. Iustice made a short exhortatio also, wth adm
of those words, that knowing as much all hee knew, if this
had not beene found out, neither the Court, citie, or any
particular families, had escaped the malice of this wicked
crueltie.

They proceeding against Sr: Thom:
Monson at Guild hall. 4. Decem:
1615.

When hee came to the barr hee made a motio to the
Lord. C. Just. that whereas hee had written to his Lop
to aske the Iust. two questions (wth my Lord would
doe) hee desired then an answere, and that Sr:
Rob: Cotton might bee present.

The Questions read, hee was indicted for conspiracy wth Weston
to poyson Sr: Thom: Overb. to wch hee pleaded not
guilty. and would be tried by God and his Countrie.

The L. chiefe Justice brack vp the proceeding, and made
a speech to this effect, that hee saw a great assembly
and thought it had beene thronged them often, yet
it could not be said to often. that the citie was much

Beyond to God, and to His deputy on earth the
king his majesty for there great deliverance and
exact justice, for God was all wayes just. and for
the king though they were never so high in place
nor so dear to him, though his own great ones, yea
his subjects first justice is dearer to him, for wch were
are vppon o[ur] knees to giue him thanks, as also for
so mild a proceeding in so great an affaire, for neither
the great mans howse in the Tower, nor his Ladies
howse, nor the ffleet prisoners howse, to my knowledge
have been searched, neither hath this prisoner been
Committed to the Shariffe, but to an Alderman, a
man who of all others might bee most kind to
him, for as I take it (least I should be mistaken)
Sr: Francis Anderson married Sr: Stevens Soames
daughter, and Sr: Thom: Morton, married Sr: Francis
Andersons sister, I never knew the like fauour
Neither doe like it soe well, but doe declare it as
a gentle proceeding from the king.

For other things I dare not discourse perfectly but though
there was no howse searched yett such letters were
produced wch make o[ur] deliuerance as great as
any that happened to the children of Israell.

For Morton & Mrs Turner they died penitently as
worthie to be written in letters of Gould, and for
the Lieften. though wth great imprecations and
an high hand hee denied, yet to the great glory
of the kings justice he dyed most penitently and
resolutely these are spoken to the praise of God, &

That hath ~~co~~warned ~~the~~ these just proceedings, justitia confirmat non-regat authoritate, though not having reason for it wherein wee may see the great hand of God for that morning the ~~L~~ was arraigned, came to mee as one afflicted in conscience knowing not of his arraignment wth evidence against him selfe wch being delivered to the Jury, one of them heard him say then Lord have mercy upon mee. and ~~for the~~ ~~plaut~~ ~~nulla [illegible]~~ ~~[illegible]~~ ~~Corpus [illegible]~~ ~~vita hominis~~ ~~[illegible]~~ ~~Corpus est~~. (present, or prisoner) therefore hee must be answered to the Tower as a safer place wth further order ~~wee~~ taken then hee addressed his speech to Sr. T. Monson saying /

Whereas yt named my Lord Treas: evermore name fame is deare to him, and he hath ever beene honourable you shall heare what hee hath answered to my letter /

After my hartie commendatio I have read that Sr. Thom: Monson thinks I can cleare him, but I know nothing of him either to accuse him or excuse him. but I hope hee is not guilty of soe foule a crime, you heare faith he that hee will neither accuse nor excuse you /.

Monson

I doe not accuse the / Treason nor calumniate him for I know hee is very true. but I desire to have answere to my two Questions /

Lord chief. just.

You shall heare of that when time serues doe you as ~~petitioner~~ Christian and as to him sad Acan my

Monson.

If I bee guilty I renoun ce the kings mercy and
Gods. I am innocent.

L. C. Just.

There is more against you then you know of.

Monson.

God I bee guilty. it is of that I know not.

L. C. Just.

Your are poapish that pulpitt was pupett where
Garnet ~~Conspiracy~~ spoke and the the L. as frenzely I am not
suspitious butt we will have a not here pulpett.

Dandrige.

It is an Athiste word to renounce Gods mercy y^e must
thing the chaunge of y^e Lodging meant some thing.

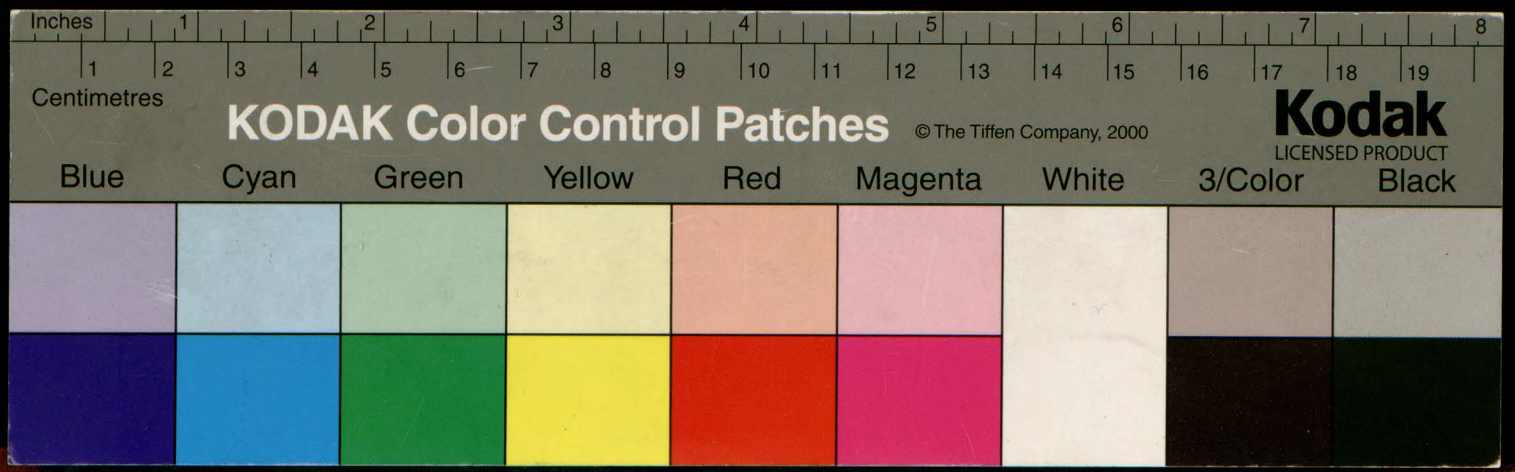
Hide.

I have looked into this business and I trust my Lord her
is as guilty as the guiltiest.

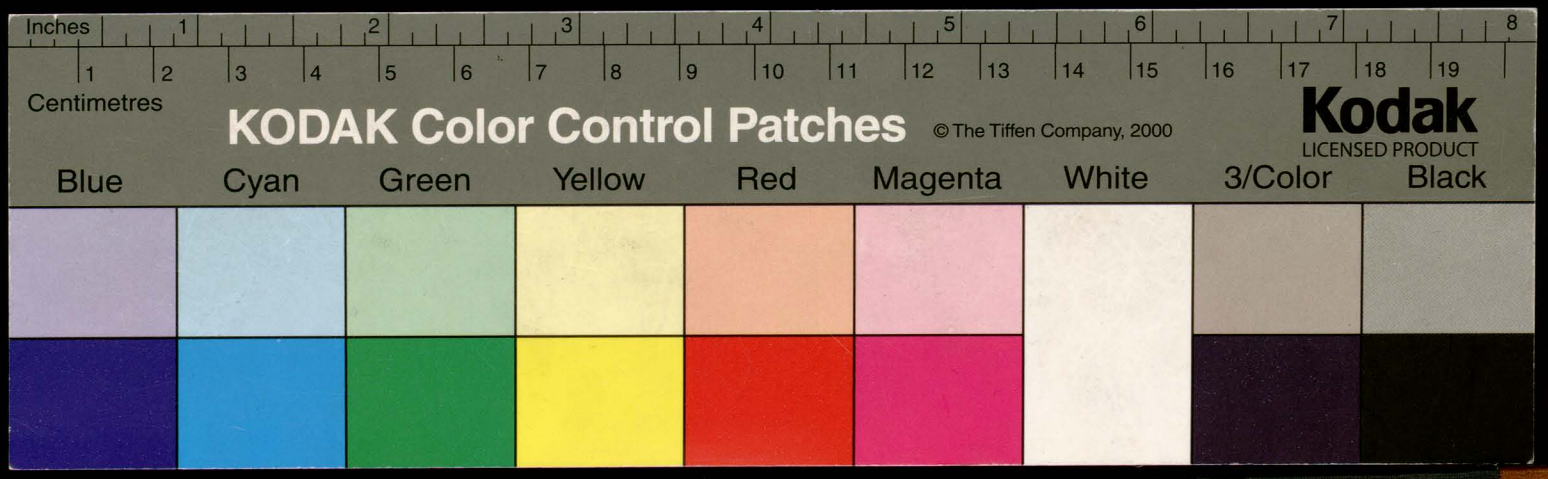
Monson.

There was never man more innocent then I in this
I will dy an innocent.

After this speech certaine yeomen of the Guard,
attending for that purpose conducted him to the
Tower where he was the yeomen Wardo^rs of the
was some contente about his entertainment.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

205


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

The question is

1 First whether the cause of the state of Bohemia bee just or not, & whether they haue the power to reiect one king & to choose another in his place /

2 ly Vpon what reasons they haue rejected king Ferdinando & whether those reasons bee good. /

3 ly what meanes they haue to preserue themselues with the king whom they haue now chosen. /

The answere is.

That the iustnesse of their cause doth apeare in y^t it is an elective kingdome wherein a free election hath beene maintained for the space of 6 ages togeth^r wch is conditionall & grounded vpon the obseruatio of their priuiledges by vertue whereof they haue called their kings from the house of Luxenburghe of Pologne & other places some kings haue beene chosen from amongst their owne Barons & at length they tooke y^e out of Hungary & the House of Austria.

It was by vertue of this free election that heretofore they deposed one Wenceslaus an idle & a vicious king & substituted & chose another. They excluded the sonne of their king George & tooke another in his roome. They did in y^e yeare 1608 quitte Rodulfe who was king of Bohemia the yeare before hee was emperour.

And if it bee objected vnto them, yt the house of Hush
haue made pacte & conventions wth the sd States to
establishe the succession of yt kingdome, they answ
yt those agreements & conventions were made by fac
by violence, & by threatninge.

The sd house had fallen sutirely from those rights
violated the priuiledges of the States of yt country &
ye promises & othes wch were made & taken. &
this point the sd States wth those of Moravia, Silesia
Lusatia vppr & lower countries incorporated to the
of Bohemia haue receiued their confirmations to
maintaine their liberties freedomes & priuiledges, &
haue reciprocally ioyned their forces togeather for
maintainance thereof.

It is objected vnto them also yt they are ~~king~~subjects
the empire & can doe nothing wtout the will of
emperour.

To wch they answere yt in Aurea bulla a fundam
law of the empire ~~emperour~~ there is no subiection
to the emperour. It is ordained therein that the
& cheife patriotts of Bohemia shall haue their elec
free.

It hath beene indeed vsed that a king of Bohemia
one of the seauen electors, was to be invested by
emperour & the empire, but neither Mathias being
xoen king of Bohemia was invested by the empero
Radulph nor Ferdinand being xoen so as heer

by the Bohemians had any investiture from the emperor Mathias, whence it appeareth that those of the house of Austria made no great reckoning of that investiture

It is also to bee considered that the Bohemians are neuer called to appeare at any of the imperiall dyets nor are comprehended in their contributions wth other states are accustomed to grant at the said assemblies as by dayly experience is made manifest.

The reasons for wch Ferdinando hath beene rejected or rather hath put himselfe out by absoluing lately the said states from their oath, are amongst others these wch follow.

first for having done contrary to his promise & letters reuersall & to the conditions vpon wch hee was chosen vsed not any wayes to meddle wth the affaires of Bohemia during the life of the emperour Mathias wch not withstanding hee hath no wayes obserued in being so forward to thrust himselfe into their affaires that hee plotted or rather diuelled his counsailes against them as much as hee could, having chased & imprisoned the Cardinall Clopell chiefe of the imperiall councell, because hee was not of his minde in this business adwising rather to proceed against the Bohemians by faire & gentle meanes: for hauing by the instigations of the Jesuits inbroyled

& confounded the estate of the kingdome wch before was
peacable, for having brought in strangers for the manage
of the business: for having hindred the assemblies of the
states & grounded on their priviledges, for having constra
men to goe to masse & by force caused the mouthes
of some to be opened to make them swallowed down
the host. for having teamed the xxxxes of both of the
religion for having brought in subjection the xxxxes
properly belonging to the diocesses of that kingdom
to the jurisdiction of the strech bishop of Praque
against all right & to bee breefe) for indeavoring
to abolish in the end the priviledges of the said kin
by sux meanes as are heare to tedious to estate.

2ly for entring into that kingdome by force & bringing in a
army without a consent of the states, for wch there
is an expresse article in their lawes, that whosoe
doth it bee hee king or other doth depriue himselfe
ipso facto of all dignitie & becometh thereby an enim
to the country & so is esteemed

3ly The said states do further shew that the electio of
Ferdinand into Bohemia was most vniustly plotte
& practised by some factious persons who doubting
that the countries incorporated to Bohemia, viz
Moravia, Silesia, & the vppere & lowere Lusatia would
not give their voice to Ferdinand. they brought it
about yt those provinces were called to yt electio

Only there was admitted some few papists & partialists, who did governe all, & in the meane time they intended on the one side the vast of the said states & deprived on the other side the chiefe protestaunts of their charges taking from the Count de Souvny the government of the Castle & Carlsthein where the crowne is kept. They also differred the election of king Ferdinando so late vntill the most part of the Protestants thinking that nothing should have beene done yt day, went there wayes, but the Romane catholicks who had the watch word never stirred away vntill yt the ~~Protestants~~ Partisans of Spayne forthead with the presence of the emperour Mathias of his & of his guarde caused them to choose king Ferdman. At wch act & course of proceedings the other members of that crowne did & do solemnly protest.

4ly That the sd king Ferdinando had treated wth Spaine to make yt kingdome of Bohemia to the house of Austria.

5ly That the sd states doe complayne of the most barbarous Cruelties wch are exercised in their country against women & children & against very dead Bodyes done by the expresse commandement of the sd king Ferdinando witnes those letters of his wch were interpreted the sd states protesting also yt their consciences have moved them yea & constrained them to deliver their country from this tyranny, when before their eyes they see their consciences lives & goods miserably defaced & taken away contrary to their priviledges

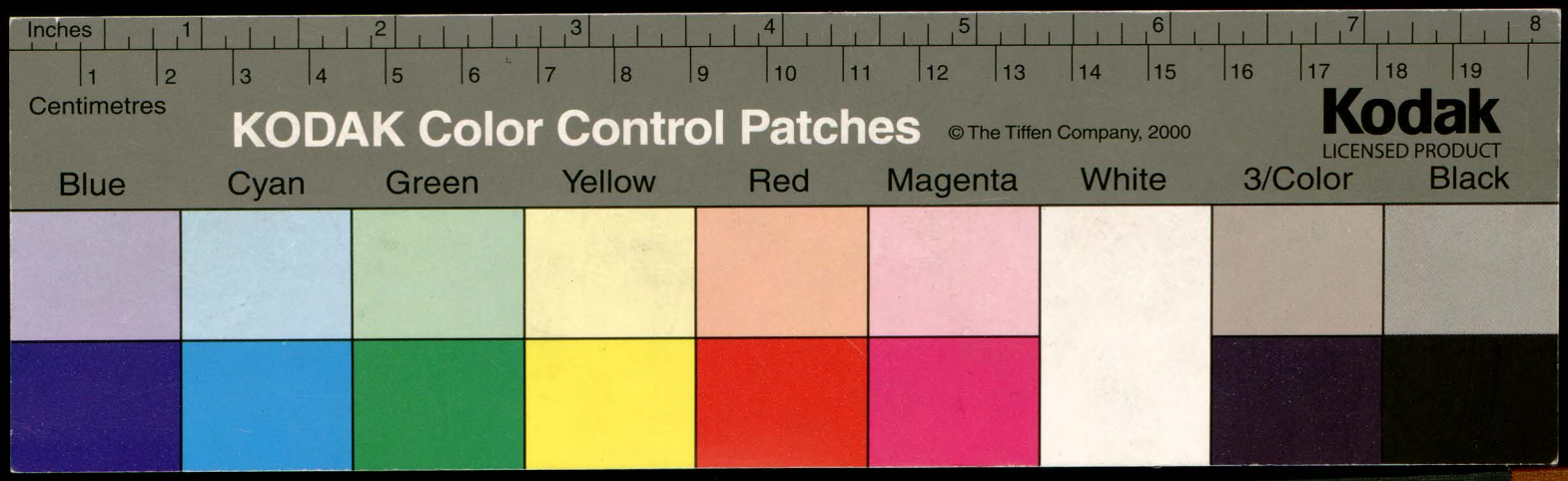
to the Letters de Majesty, & other promises solemnly sworn
but never kept, considering besides that vnder the
king Ferdinando wholly governed by the seditious
spirits of the Jesuites & by the ministers of from
& Spayne full of pride vengeance, & cruelty, there
no hope of assured peace, for her would not so many
as heare the Embassador wch for his purpose was
sent vnto him from diuers provinces, now with stand
that formerly he had given hope of the contrary.

for this reason & for other inevitable ~~inevitable~~ necessities they
constraine according to their charge to remove the
Ferdinand & to preserue the safeties of their com
& commonalty before all other respects wch is a
principall & soueraigne law acknowledge priuately
by all men.

In the 3d place touching the meanes of their preseru
with the king they haue now chosen, their hope is y
God the protector of Justice will maintaine their
their good cause, wherein they haue no other ayme b
the conseruatio of the true religio & the liberty of th
country for wch they haue powred to liue & dy
gether assuring themselues God will toux the hart
of Xtian kings Princes & states, whose seing the typ
of the house of Austria, will not Abandon them in
a just cause: but aide & defend them against all opp
& violence.

And by meanes of ye wisdome, good providence credit & courage & power of the king whom God hath given them, & of his friends & confederats, they are in hope to settle their kingdome in peace & tranquillity, wherevnto ye better to attaine they have resolued to direct & command their forces by a generalissme having to that end hauing reuiued their confederats

They have likewise established their confederacy wth ye vppr & lower Austria, holding good correspondency wth ye peares & states of ye vnion, wch ye vnited provinces of ye low countries wth ye kingdome of Hungary & wth ye Prince of Transilvania who is now in ye field wth an army in fauour of them & all this tends to the maintenance & comforte of those wch make profession of ye true religion & yt for ye conservatio of those Roman Catholicks also who living peacably & quietly amongst them in ye exercise of their religio studie the obedience of ye comm̃ ordynances & priuiledges of yt kingdome.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

215

The Examinations of the Earle of Southampton.

1621

The first day

1 Whether his owne conscience did not accuse him of Vnthankfullnesse to the King, in the latter part of the Parliament, wch his Matie had cause to doubt, as well by his owne carriage in the Vpper House (though that should not be objected to him) as by that in the lower House of some very neare him?

Answ: He protested his conscience was free, nor euer did, nor could accuse him of any such thing. And for the carriage of any in the lower House, how neare so euer to him, though it displeased his Majesty, he knewe it was too iust, to lay it vpon him euery one being free there, and it not being in his power to direct or hinder them.

2 Whether he were not partie to a practise in the time of cessation at Easter, to hinder the Kings ends at y^e^ meeting; and whether there were not meeting and consultation held to that intent?

Answ: He neither was partie to any such practise, nor knew of any such thing, nor of any meeting or consultation to that end: yet he had enquired of it, because he hearde before the ends of the Parliament, that some such thing was contriued to haue bene in that time, but he founde nothing.

3 Whether in the time of Parliament, some of the House did not vsually come by into the Committee chamber of the Vpper House, vpon designe and plott, to receiue directions from him, what to doe in their owne the same day?

Answ. Some of the lower cóme thither euery day sometimes to him sometimes to others: when he went out, he spake wᵗʰ them ordinarily and familiarly as euery one else did, and diuerse times of what was doing in theyr House and of other Parliament businesse; but that he euer had designe or plott in the comming or ytterly denieth.

4 Whether after the King had declared his purpose to adiourne the Parliament, he had not practised wᵗʰ some of the lower House to crosse ye King either when he would haue no bills to passe, or afterwards, when he would haue had bills to haue passed.

Answ. He Knewe not such practise, at either of those times.

5ᵗᵉ Whether he had no practise wᵗʰ some of the lower House to worke that some of the subsidyes now graunted might be sent to ye King and Queene of Bohemia by order of the House, wᵗʰ out comming at all into the Exchequʳ?

Answ. That question was the first words he euer heard of such a thing.

The second time examined.

1 The same Questions wᵗʰ the time before, was first asked him: and whether now vpon more consideration he found not cause to answer otherwise then he had done?

Answ. Vpon all considerations that might be, he would make no other answer then before.

2 What discontents he had lately receiued, and who he expressed them either towards ye King his gouernment, or any person vnder him?

Answ: none: nor had, that ye Knowe, expressed towards ye King, or his gouvrment, if there had beene unkindnes betweene him, and any neare the King, that concerned not his maiesty.

3 Whether he had not sayed, things were amisse in the State?

Answ. He had spoken freely, and ordinarily of all such things as were handled in the Parliament, and, as he thought every one els had done; but had not beene curious, to seeke faults.

4 Whether he had not sayd, that there would neuer bee a good reformation while one did so wholy gouerne the King?

Answ. He denyed it.

5 Answ. What he meant by a speach he vsed to the B: of Coventry and Lichfeild by way of discourse (he thinks in the House) ~~that he made~~ that he made vnseasonable motions?

Answ. He meant it by the motion he had made when the controuersy was betweene the Lo: of Buckingham, and him in the House, for he thought his motion would haue beene more seasonable, when the House had decided who was in the error.

6 Whether he had not sayd he lykt not to come to the Councell Table, there were so many boyes and base fellowes?

Answ. He denieth it.

7 Whether he knew of the busines of Ireland, before it was moued

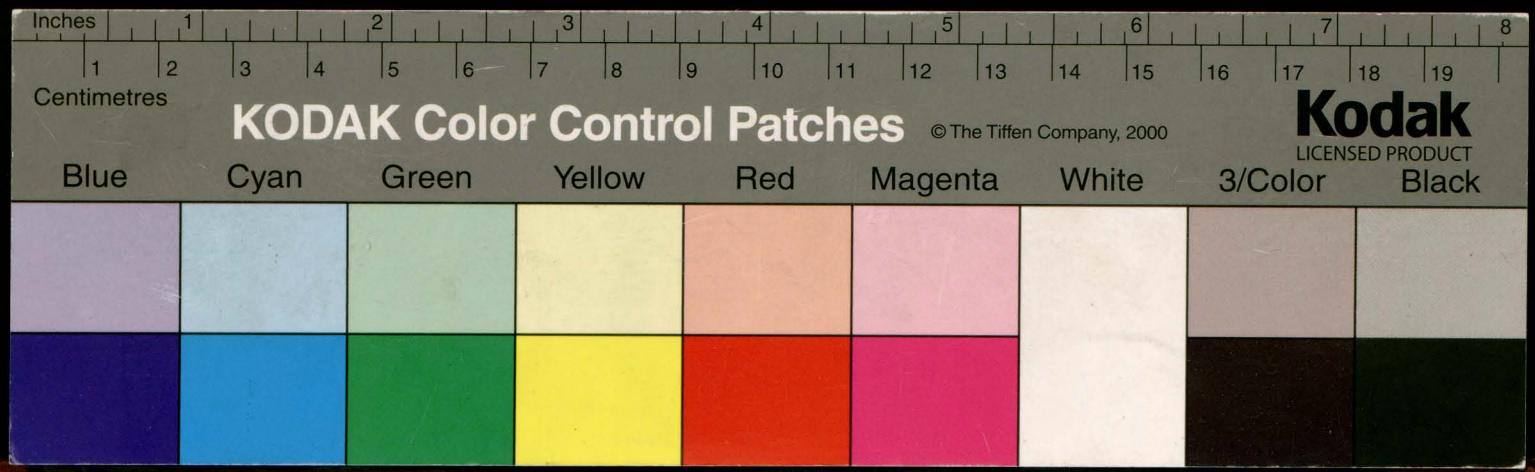
Answ. He had heard of it spoken at his owne house by Sr Edm Sapson.

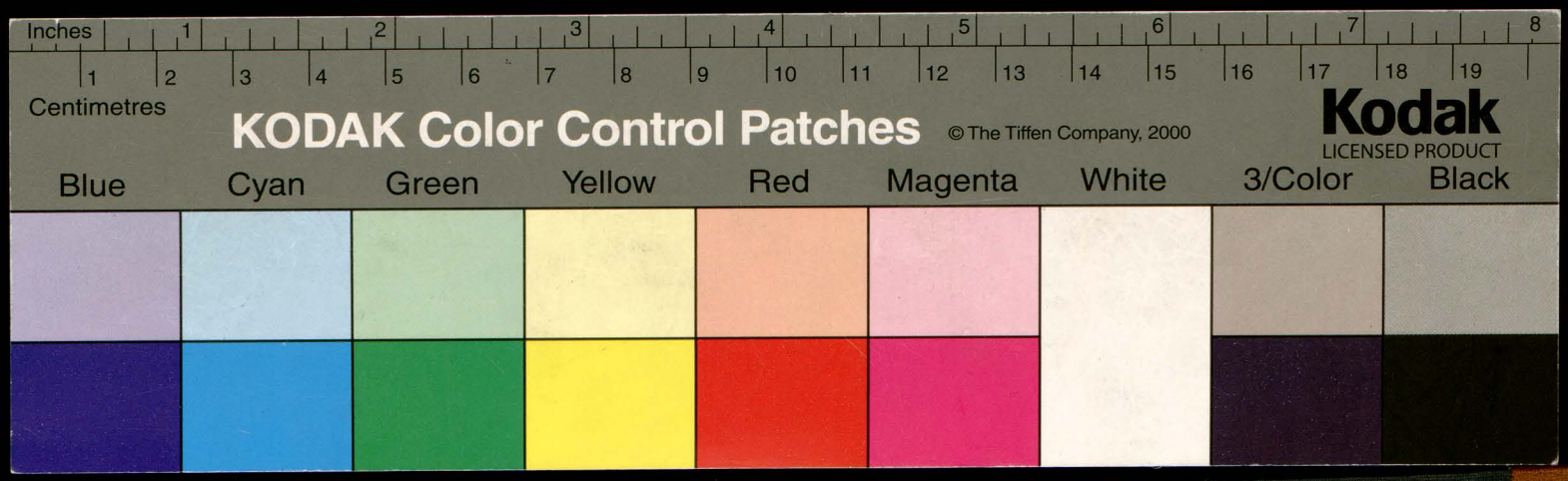
8 Whether he had heard no motion made, to weare swords in theyr House?

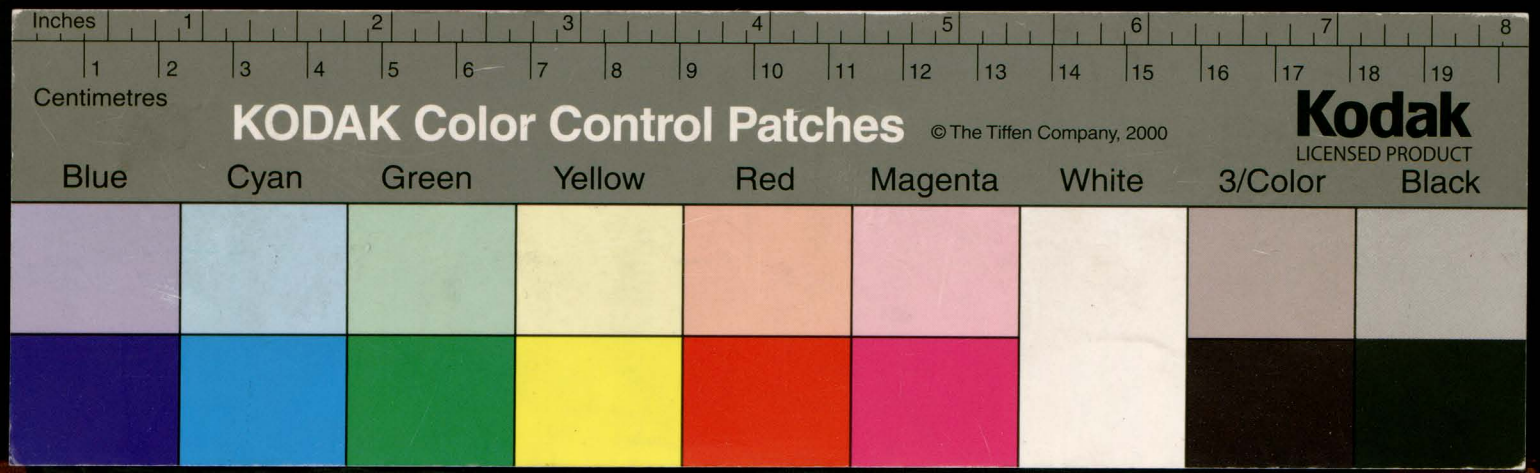
Answ. neuer: but himselfe and others did obserue that sworn
weare still worne there; and when he saw euery o
els doe soe, he did soe too.

9 Whether he did not heare one that satt neare h
say, he would goe forth and put on his sword, a
returne, and he encouraged him soe to doe

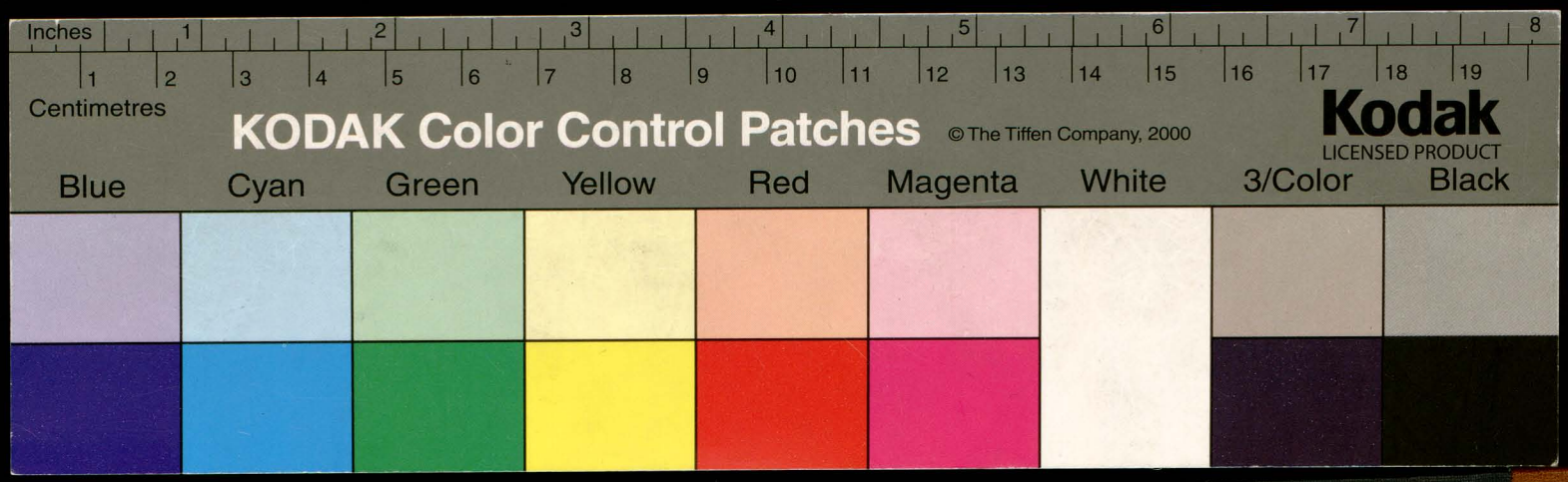
Answ. He did heare one say, y^t he left his sword at
his boy, and he would goe and fetch it one, an
come againe or somewhat to this purpose, and
he minding the businesse of y^e House, sayd, doe


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

221


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

Sent by Sr Thomas Rowe Embassador to the Great Mogol

How gratious is yt Matie, wch God preserue. as vpon a rose in garden, so are myne eyes fixed vpon you: God maintaine yr estate, that yr Monarchy, ~~that may~~ prosper & bee augmented, & that you may obtaine all yr desires, worthy the greatnes of yr renowne & as yr hart is noble & vpright, so let God giue you a glorious reigne. because you stedfastly defend the law of the Matie of Jesus, wch God make yet more flourishing, for that it was confirmed by Miracles, & the same honor, wch God had giue vnto Moses & to Jesus, the same God giueth vnto you.

The letter of loue wch you wrote vnto me, I haue receiued & haue vnderstood all that was contained therein, & all the presents & rarities wch you sent me, are deliuered vnto mee, wch I haue receiued with max delight loue, & great content, & haue receiued them as if the kings my Auncestors had sent them to mee. & in what soeuer I may giue you the like content, I haue giuen my comand to all my kingdomes & vassal as well to the greatest as to the least, & to all my sea-ports, that it is my pleasure, & I doe commaund that to all the English mer xants in my dominions bequeath freedome & residence: and I haue comanded by my word that no subiect of my kingdomes shall bee so bould to doe any injurie or molestatio to the said English

That their goods & merchandize they may sell &
traffique according to their owne will & their own
content, & that of all things wch they do desire
they may buy, carry forth & trade freely, for
it is my good will & pleasure, that they may so
doe.

And that all their ships may come & goe, to my po
wheresoever they choose at their owne will, & I
have comanded the great Lord Asaph-chan that
hee take this contract & business in hand his ca
that hee further give or enlarge in all matters
belonging to the sea or land according as I have
given my security & agreement: & what soever
same Lord Asaph-Chan shall doe shall stande in
force as well in Articles of contract, as in all the
other desires or accons & what soever goods shall
come frō yr kingdome hether unto mee or any to
or shall goe to them frō my kingdomes, shall have
no hinderance or impediment, but shall passe with
honor & freindship.

God give yᴱ Mᵗⁱᵉ health.

When yᵉ Majestie shall open this letter, let yᵉ Royall hart be as fresh as á sweet garden, let all people make reuerence at yᵉ gate, let yᵉ throne bee advanced higher amongst the greatest of the kingdoms of the proudest Jesus, let yᵉ Mistris bee the greatest, & all Monarxies drinc their councell & wisdome from thy brest, as from á fountaine: that the law of the Matie of Jesus may reuiue & flourish vnder yᵉ protection.

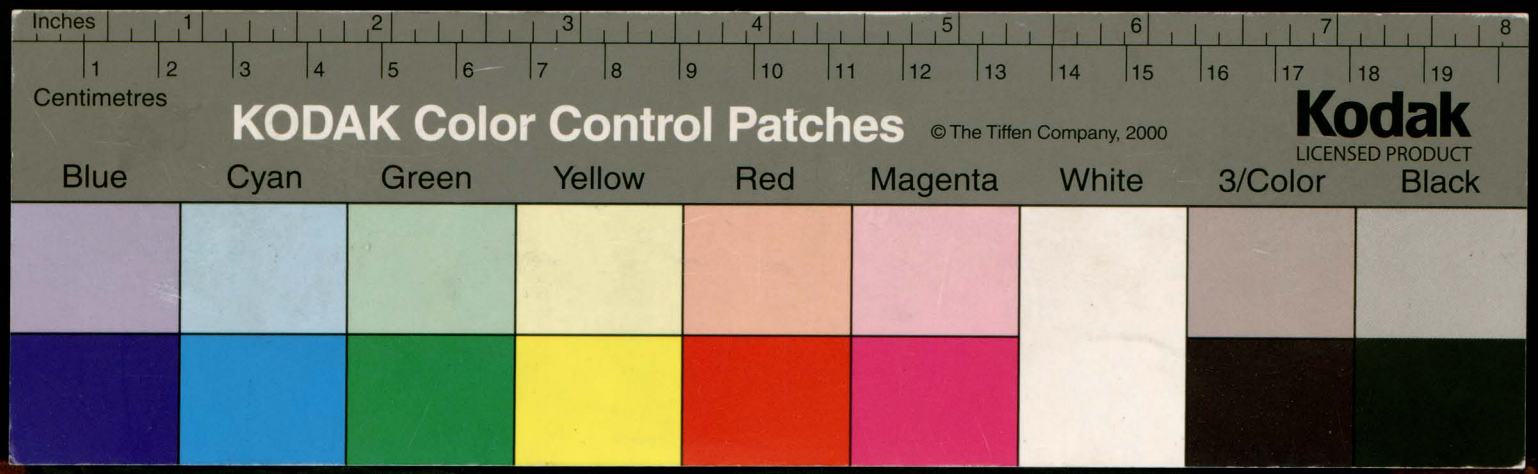
The letters of loue & friendship wᶜʰ you sent, & the presents, tokens of yᵉ good affection towards me, I haue receiued by the hands of yᵉ Embassador Sʳ Thomas Rowe, who well deserueth to bee yᵉ trusted seruant, deliuered to me in an acceptable & happie howre, vppon wᶜʰ mine eyes were so fixed, that I could not easily remoue them away to anie other obiect, & haue accepted them with great Joy & delight.

Vppon wᶜʰ assurance of yᵉ royall loue, I haue giuen my generall cōmand to all the kingdomes & Portes of my dominions, to receiue all the marchants of the English nation, as the subiects of my friends, that in what place soeuer they choose to liue, they may haue

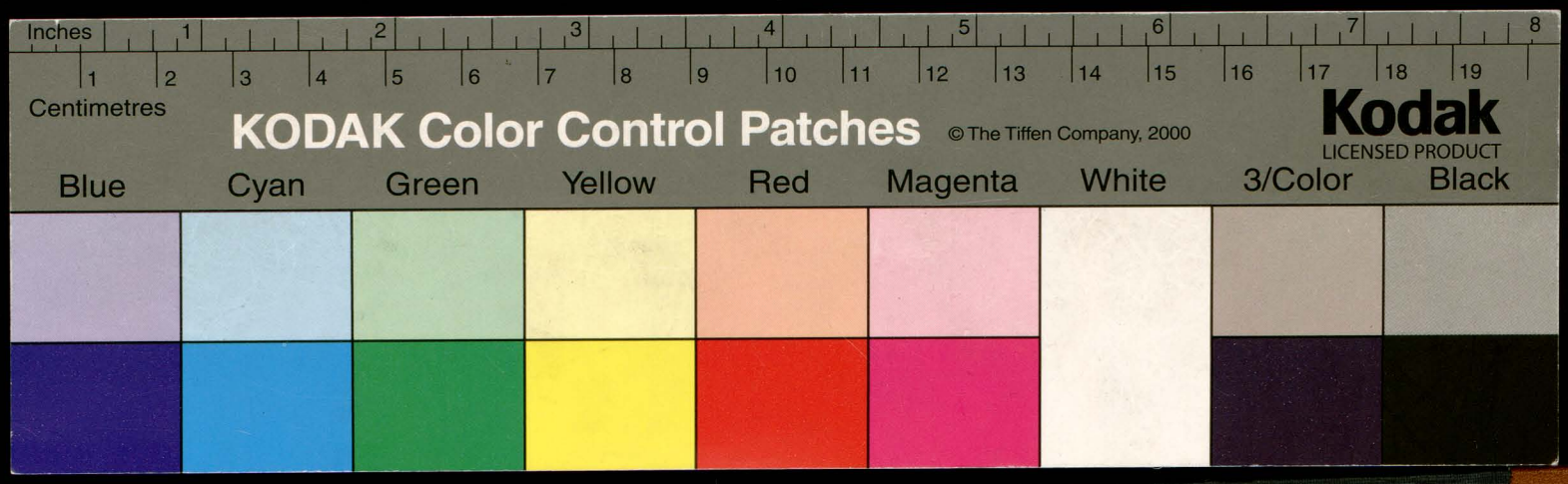
Reception & residence, to their owne content & safety: & [illegible]
goods soever they desire to sell or buy, they may [illegible] libertie
with out any restraint, & at what Port soever they shall
arrive, that neither Portugall, nor any other shall
dare to molest them quiet & in what countrie soever
they shall have residence, I have comanded all my
Governours & Captaines, to give them freedome and [illegible]
to their owne desires to sell buy & to transport, into the
countrie at their pleasures.

For confirmation of o[r] love & freindship I desire y[r]
Matie to command y[e] Merchants to bring in their
ships all sort of rarities & rich goods fit for my palace
& that you bee pleased, to send my y[e] Royall letters
by every opportunitie, that I may rejoyce in y[r]
health & prosperous affaires, that o[r] freindship may
be interchanged & alternatt, y[r] Matie is learned
quicke sighted as a prophet, & can conceive much by
few wordes, that I need no more,

The God of heaven give you & [illegible]
encrease of honor.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

927


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

Mr Speaker.

Wee haue heard by diuerse reports to our great greefe: yt ye far distance of our person at this time from our hie Court of Parl. caused by our want of health, hath imboldened some fiery and popular Spirits in our house of commons to debate and argue publikly in matters far beyond yr reach or capacity: and so tending to our high dishonour, and ye wrenching upon of our prerogatiue Rojall: you shall therefore acquaint ye house wth our pleasure: yt none tharin shall henceforth presume to meddle wth any thing concerning our gouernment or ministery of state: namely not to speake of our dearest sons match wth ye daughter of Spayne nor to touch ye honour of yr King, nor any other our friends or Confederats: and allso not to meddle wth any mans particular who haue yr due course in our ordinary Courts of Justice. And whereas we heare yt yi haue sent a messenger to Sr Edwind Sands to know ye reason of his late restraint: you shall in our name resolue them yt it was not for any misdemeanure of his in Parl: but to put them out of doubt of any question of that nature yt may arise among them: heare after you shall resolue them in our name: yt wee thinke our selues very free and able to punish any mans misdemeanure in Parlt as well during yr sitting as after: wch wee meane not to spare hereafter upon any occasion if any mans insolent behauiours shall be ministred unto us: and if yi haue allready touched any of these poynts wch were haue heere forbidden in any petition of yrs wch is to be sent unto us: it is our pleasure yt you shall tell them yt except they reforme it before it come to our hands, we will not deigne ye hearing or answering of it. And whereas wee heare yt yi are desirous yt wee should make yr in a Session of Parlt before Christmas: you may tell them it shall be in yr default if they want it: for if they will make ready between yr and yt time some such law as shall be really good for ye Comō Weale wee will

wee will willingly giue our royall assent unto them: and shall
shall really appeare yt if good lawes be not made at this t
for ye weale of ye people, ye blame shall onely and most
thly bee your: such turbulent spirits as shall preferre their
particular ends to ye weale of ye Kingdome and common
wealth. And so wee bid you farr well.

Given at our Court at Newmarket ye 30 of Dec. 1621.

To our trusty and well beloued Speaker
of our comons house of Parliament.

---

most grat: and dread Soe: wee ye mties most humble and loyall subiects ye
Knights and Burr: now assembled in Parll: wch represent ye comons
of ye Realme full of hearty sorrow to bee depriued of ye comfort of
ye royall presence, rather for that it proceedeth from want of ye
healthe, when wee all vnfeinedly suffer: In humble manner calling
to minde ye gracious answer to our former petition concerning
Religion: wch notwithstanding ye mties pious and princely intention
hath not produced ye good effect, wch ye danger of ye times doe seeme
to vrge to require: and finding how your mties goodnes hath time re-
quited by printes of another Religion who euer in time ~~of~~ treaty
haue taken opportunity to aduance their owne ends tending to ye
subuerting of Religion and disadvantage of ye affaires and ye state
of ye children, by reason whereof ye ill affected subiects at home
(ye Po: Recusants) haue taken too much encouragment and are
dangerously encreased in their number and in their insolency wch
cannot but be sensible hereof, and therefore humbly represent
what wee conceiue to bee ye causes of so great and growing mischiefe
and what may bee ye remedies
ye sedulity and ambition of ye Pope of Rome and his dearest seeme
to on aiming at ab large a temporall monarchie ab ye other at a
spirituall supremacy -

2 The diuelish doctrines and poore wherevpon Popery is built and taught
with authority to their followers for advancements of their temporall
ends

3 The distressed and miserable estate of the professors of the true
Religion in forraine parts.

4 The disastrous events to y^r mties children abroad expressed w^th weep-
ing and cursing w^th the contempt of their persons.

5 The strong confederacy of y^e princes of the Po: Religion aiming mainly
at the advancing of theirs and subverting of ours and taking the
advantage conducing vnto y^r end vpon all occasions.

6 The great and many armies raised and maintained at the charge
of the K. of Spaine the chiefe of that league.

7 The expectation of the Po: Recusants of the match w^th Sp: feeding them-
selves w^th great hopes of the consequences thereof.

8 The interposing of forraine Princes and their Agents in the behalfe
of Po: Recusants for continuance of favor vnto them.

9 The open and vsuall resort to the houses, and w^th ease, to the
chappells of forraine Ambassadors.

10 Their more then vsuall confluence vnto the citty and their frequent
conventicles and conferences there.

11 The education of their children in many severall seminaries and
houses of their Religion appropriated only to y^e English fugitives

12 The grants of y^e late forfeitures intended by y^r mtie as a reward of
services but beyond y^r mties intention transferred and expounded
for at sure meane rates as will amount to a little lesse then a
Toleration.

13 The licentious printing and dispersing of seditious and Po: bookes
even in the time of Parl:

14 The swarme of Preists and Jesuites the common incendiaries of all
Christendome dispersed in all parts of y^e Kingdomes and from
their haunts as bitter rootes: were humbly offer vnto y^r mtie
that were forresee and feare there will necessarily follow very dange-
rous effects to thestate and state. for

1 The Po: Religion is incompatible w^th ours by reason of their pos.

2 It draweth w^th it an vnavoidable dependance on forraine Princes

3 It openeth too wide a gappe of popularity to any that shall
draw soe great a party.

4 It hath a restlesse spirit and will strive by these gradatis if it once gett but a tolleration from hence they will aspire to a superiority, and will never rest till it gett a subversion of the true Religion.

The remedies against these growing evils wch in all humblenes we offer to ye ~~mtie~~ most excellent wisedome are these.

1 That seeing it is inevitable necessity is fallen upon yr mtie wch wee wisedome nor providence of a pious and greatable King. than wch honour avoid yr mtie would not omitt yis just occasion speedily and effectually to take yr sword into yr hands

2 That once undertaken upon soe noble and just ground yr mtie would resolve to persue and more publikely to anew ye aiding of those of yr Religion in forraine parts wch doubtlesse would revive other princes and states of the Union by these disasters discouraged and disbanded.

3 That your mtie would purpose to yr selfe to manage yis warre wch the best advantage by a diversion or otherwise will as in yr deepe Judgment shall be found fittest and not to rest upon a warre in those parts only wch will consume yr treasure and discourage yr people.

4 That ye brunt of yr warre and point of yr sword bee against ye Prince whatsoever opinion of potency he hath whose armies and treasure have first diverted, and since maintained ye warre in the Palat.

5 That for the securing of our peace at home your mtie will bee pleased to revive the parts of our humble petition formerly delivered to yr mtie and hereunto annexed and put in execution by ye care of those Comissioners to bee hereunto specially appointed ye lawes allready and hereafter to bee made for the prevenenting of dangers by Po: Recusants and yer wonted evasions

6 That to frustrate their hopes for a future age, our most noble Prince may bee timly and happily married to one of yr Religion.

7 That the children of your Po: and Gentry of yis kingdome and of

otherd ill affected and suspected in their Religion now beyonde the Seab may forthwth bee called home by the meanes or at the charge of their Parents and Gouernors.

8 That the children of Po: Recusants, or such whose wives are Po: Recusants may bee brought vp during their minority wth Protes= tant Scholmrs, and trained vpon may sow in their tender years the seede of true Religion

9 That your Mtie will bee pleased speedily to reuoke all former licences for such children and youth to trauaile beyond the Seab and not to grant any such licence hereafter.

10 That your Mties learned Counsell may receiue commaund from your Highnes carefully to looke into all former grants of Recu= sants Lands and to auoid them if by Law they can and that your Mtie would stay your hand from passing any such grant hereafter.

This is the summe and effect of our humble declaration wch nor way intending to presse vpon your Mties most vndoubted and Regall Prerogatiue wee doe wth the fulnes of all duty and obedience humbly submitt vnto your Mties prudent consideration, the glory of god whose cause it is, the Zeale of true Religion in wch wee have bine borne and wherein by Gods grace wee are re= solued to die the safety of your Mties person who are the very life of your people the happines of your children and poster= ity the honor and good of your Church and State dearer vnto vs then our owne liues, hauing kindled these affections truly deuo= ted vnto your Mtie and seeing out of our duty to your Mtie wee haue allready resolued to giue at the end of this Session one entire subsidy for the present releife of the Parl: only to bee payed in the end of Febr: next. wch cannot well bee effec= ted but by passing a bill in a Parliamentary course before the feast of Christmab wee most humbly beseech your Mtie (ab our assured hope is) that you will then also vouchsafe to giue life by your Royall assent to such bills ab before

that time shall be prepared for your mties honor and the
generall good of your people: and that suche bills also may be
accompanied (w^ch hath bine accustomed) w^th your mties gracious
pardon, w^ch proceedinge from your owne meere grace may
be drawne by your Highnes direction to that latitude and
extent as may best sort w^th your ma^ties bounty and goodnes:
and that not only fellons and criminall offenders may take
benefitt therof but that your good subiects may receive ease
therby: and if it shall so stand w^th ~~your~~ your good pleasure
that it may extend to the release of all debts and duties
to your crowne before the first yeare of your mties
Raigne: to the discharge of all alienations w^th license,
and misusing of Liveries and outerlemans before the
first sumons of Parl: and concealed wards Typpes and not
and not suing of Liveries and outerlemans before the
12^th of your Raigne w^ch gracious favor would much comfort
your good subiects, and ease them of much vexation, w^th
little losse or preiudice to your owne profit: and wee by
our daily and devout prayers to the Almighty the great
King of Kings shall contend for a blessing upon our
endeavours and for your mties long and happy reigne
over vs and for your childrens childreen after you for
many and many generations. Amen.

A protestation made & tendered in ye comons house of Parlia ye 18th of Dec. 1621.

The comons now assembled in Parl: being iustly occasioned thereunto concerning sundery liberties, franchizes, & priuiledges of Parl: amongst others not here in mencioned, do make ye ptestacõ following.

The Liberties, franchizes, and iurisdicõs of Parl: are ye ancient & undoubted birthright and inheritance of ye subiects of England: and yt ye arduous & urgent affayres cõcerning ye K. state & defence of ye Realme, and of ye Church of England, & ye maynteñace & making of lawes & ye redresse of mischiefs and greeuances wch dayly happen wthin ye Realme are proper subiects & matter of counsell & debate in Parl: And yt in ye handling & proceeding in those businesses, every member of ye house of Parl: hath and ought to haue freedome of speech, to propound, treat reason and to bring to cõclusiõ ye same: And yt ye comons in Parl: haue like liberty & freedom to treat of those matters in such order as ye iudgment shall seem fittest: And yt every member of ye said house hath like freedome frõ impeachment, imprisonment, and molestacion, other yn yt censure of ye house

house it selfe, for or concerning any bill, speaking, reasoning or declaring of any matter or matters touching y^e Lawe: or Law: byesinesse: And y^t if any of y^e sayd members be complained of and questioned for any thing done or sayd in Lawe: y^e shewed by^e K. by y^e advise & assent of all y^e Comons assembled in y^e Lawe: before y^e K. giue credit to any privat information.

To the Kings most excellent Matie

Most dread & gracious Soueraine,

Wee yor most humble & loyall subiects, ye Knights, Citizens, & Burgesses assembled in ye Comons House of Parl: full of greife & unspeakable sorrowe through ye true sence of yor Maties displeasure, expressed by yor letter lately sent to our speaker, & by him related & read unto us: yet cōforted againe wth ye assurance of your grace and goodnes, and of ye sincerity of or owne intenc̄ons & proceedings, wherein wth cōfidence wee all relye: in all humblenes beseech yor Most excellent Maty yt ye loyalty & dutifulnes of us faythfull & louing subiects as euer serued or lived under a gracious Soueraigne, may not undeseruedly suffer by ye misinformac̄on of certaine reports, wch are euer unfaythfull intelligencers; but yt yor Maty would in ye cleerence of yor owne iudgment first vouchsafe to understand from or selues, and not from ye shiall misinformacion of any others, wth or humble declarac̄on and petition resolued upon by ye vniuersall voyce of ye whole house, & purposed (wth yor gracious favour) to be presented unto yor sacred Maty doth cōtaine upō wch occasion wee entred into cōsideracon of those things wch are therein cōtayned; wth wch dutifull respect to yor Maty & or service, wee did cōsidder yor, and wch was or true intenc̄on thereby: And yt wch yor

Ma^ty shall thereby truly discerne o^r dutifull affections
yo^r will in y^e Royall iudgement free us fro^m those hea-
vy charges wherewith some of our members are bur-
dened, & wherein y^e whole house y^t inuolued. And we
humbly beseech you Ma^ty, y^t you will not hereafter giue
credit to priuate reports against all or any of y^e mem-
bers of o^r house, w^ch y^e whole haue not censured, vntill
your Ma^ty haue bin truly informed thereof by o^r selues:
& that in y^e meane tyme and euer we may stand
vpright in your Ma^tys grace & good opinion; y^n w^ch no
worldly co^sideracõ is or can be dearer vnto vs. —
Whn yor Ma^ty had reassembled vs in Parl^t by your Royall
co^mandm^t sooner y^n wee expected, and did vouchsafe by the
mouths of 3 ho: Lords to impart vnto vs y^e waighty oc-
casions moving your Ma^ty thereunto, and fro^m y^n wee did
vnderstand those pticulars; That not w^tstanding your prin-
ly & pious indeauours to procure peace, y^e time was now
come y^t Janus his temple must be opened, y^t y^e voyce
of Bellona must be heard; & not y^e voyce of y^e turtle,
y^t yr was no hope of peace, nor any truce to be obtained,
no not for a few dayes, y^t your Ma^ty must either aban-
do^n your owne children, or engage your selfe in to a warr
wherin co^sideracõ was to be had w^t foot, w^t horse
w^t money would be sufficient, That y^e Lower palatinate
was seised vpon by y^e Army of y^e K. of Spayne as ex-
ecutor of y^e Ban there in quality of y^e Duke of
Burgundy, as y^e vpp^r Palatinate was by y^e Duke of

Bana

Bauaria, yt ye K: of Spayne at his owne charge had now
at leaste fiue seuerall armyes on foot, ye L^es ye princes of the
Vnion were disbanded, but ye Catholiq; league remained firme
wherby those princes so dissolu'd were in daunger one by one
to be ruined, yt ye estate of those of ye Religion in forraign
parts was miserable, and yt out of these cõsideracions wee
were called to a warr and forthwth Direct of a supply
for keeping ye forces in ye Palatinate from disbanding
and to foresee ye meanes for ye rayseing & maintayning of ye
Body of an army for ye warr against ye spring: Wee there-
fore out of or zeale to your Mty and yor posterity, wth
more alacrity & celerity yn euer was presented in Parlt
did addresse our selues to ye seruice cõmended unto us.
And allthough wee can not cõceiue yt ye honor & safety
of your Mty & your posterity, ye patrimony of your Chil-
dren inuaded and possessed by yr enimy, ye welfare of Re-
ligion and stake of your Kingdome are matters at any
time unfitt for or deepest cõsideracõ in tyme of Parlt: And
allthough before this time wee were in some of those
high points silent: yet being now inuited thereunto, and
led on by so iust an occasiõ wee thought it or duty
to prouide for ye present supply yrof, and not onely to
turne our eyes on a warr abroad, but to take care for
ye securing of or peace at home, wch ye dangerous in-
crease and insolency of Popish Recusants apparantly visi-
ble and sensible did lead us vnto. The cõsideracõ wherof

of did necessarily draw us truly to represent unto your Mty
wch were conceived by ye cause wch were feared would be th'effects
& wch were hoped might be ye remedyes of those growing e-
vills. amongst wch as accidents unavoydable, were fall upon
some things wch seemed to touch upo ye K. of Spayne a
as yt have relation to ye popish Recusants at home, to ye
warrs by him maintayned in ye Palatinate against ym
Mtys Children, and to ye generall armyes now on foot:
yet (as wee cōceaued) wthout touch of dishonor to ye King
or any other Prince your Mtys confederate. In ye discourse
whereof we did not assume to or selves any power to de-
termin any part thereof, nor intended to incroach, or in-
trude upon ye sacred bounds of yr Regall auctority;
to whom & to whom onely wee humbly acknowledge it
doth belong to resolue of peace & warr, and of ye
Marriage of ye most noble prince your Sonne: but as your
most loyall & humble subiects & servants, representing
ye whole cōmons of your Kingdome who have a large
interest in ye happy & prosperous estate of yr Mty and
your Royall Posterity, and of ye flourishing estate of or
Church & cōmō-wealth, did resolue out of our carye &
fearey truly & plainly to demonstrate those things to
your Mty. wch wee were not assured could otherwise
come so fully and clearly to your knowledge: &
that being done, to lay ye same downe at your feet,
wthout expectation of any other answere from
your

your Mty, touching those high poynts, y^t w^ch at y^r good pleasure & y^r owne time should be held fitt. This being y^e effect of y^t wee had formerly resolued upon; and these y^e occasiõs & reasons inducing y^e same.

Or humble suite to y^r Mty, and or confidence y y^t your Mty will be graciously pleased to vouchsafe ät y^e hands of these our Messengers or former humble declaratiõ & petiõ: & to vouchsafe to reade, and fauorably to interpret y^e same: and y^t to so much thereof as cõtaineth or humble petiõ against Jesuites, Preests, and Popish Recusants, y^e passing of Bills, and graunting your Royall & gracious pardon, you will vouchsafe an answere to us. And whereas your Mty by y^e generall words of y^r great letter seemeth to vse frame as tho^u intermedling wth matter of gouernment, or particulars w^ch lane y^r moon in Courts of Justice: y^e generality of w^ch words in y^e largenes of y^e extent thereof (as wee hope beyond your Mtyes intention) might involue these things, w^ch are y^e proper subiects of Parliamentary actions and discourse.

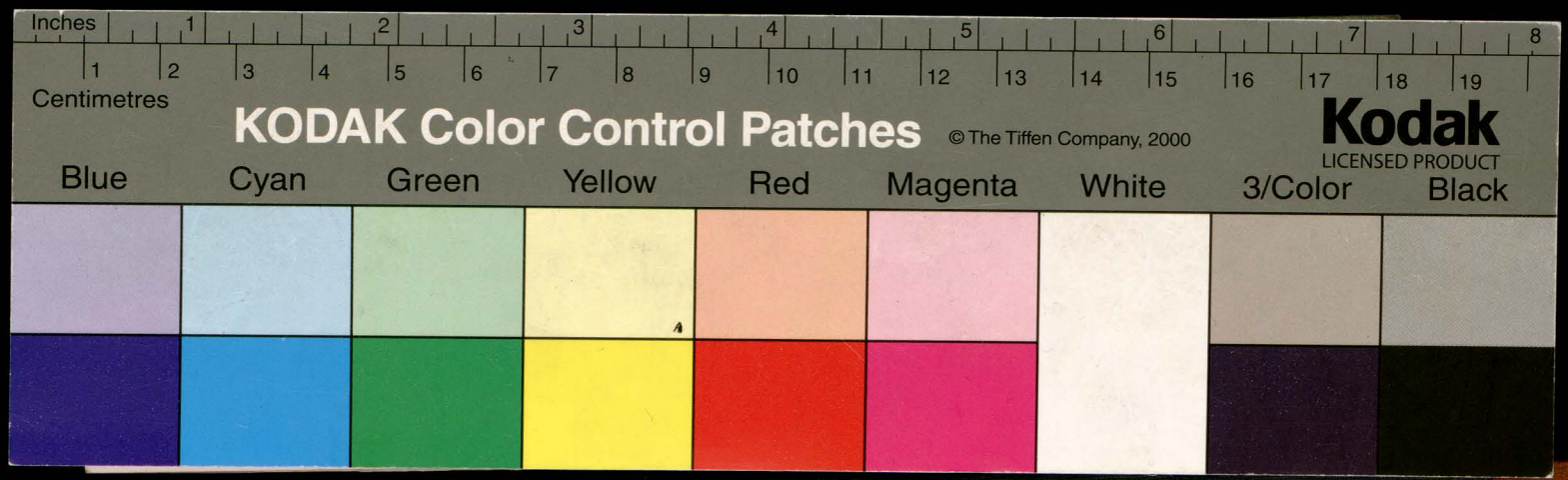
And whereas your Mties letter secrete to doth abridge us of y^e auncient liberty of Parliament, for freedome of speech, Jurisdiction & iust censure of y^e house and other proceedings there: wherein we trust in God we shall neuer transgresse the bounds of loyalty and dutifull subiects; a liberty w^ch wee assume or selues, so wise and so iust a King will not

not infringe, ye same being our auncient and undoubted right
and an inheritance receiued from our Ancestors, wth out wch
wee can not freely debate, nor cleerely discerne of ye
things in question before us, nor truly informe yur Matie
and in wch wee haue byn confirmed by yur Mties most gra-
cious former speeches & messages; Wee are therefore now
againe inforced in all humblenes to pray yur Matie to allowe
ye same; and thereby to take away ye doubts and scruples
your Mties letter to or Speaker hath brought upon
us. So shall wee your loyall and louing subiects vow
acknowledge your mties iustice, Grace, & goodnes, and be
ready to performe yt seruice to your Matie wch in ye
true affections of or harts wee professe, and
power out or dayly and deuout prayers to ye Almigh
ty for yur Mties long life, happy & religious raigne, &
prosperous State for your Royall Posterity after you
for euer.

JAMES REX.

It is not unknowen to you wt happened ys last sumer unfortunately unto or right trusty and right well beloued Counsellor ye L. Archbp of Cant: who shooting at a deere wth a Crosse bowe in Bramsell Parke, did wth ye shott casually giue ye Kesper a wound, whereof he dyed: wch accident though it might haue happened to any other man; yet because his eminent ranck and function in ye Church hath (as we are informed) ministred some occasion of doubte, as making ye cause different in his ffon, in respect of ye scandall as is supposed: We therefore being desirous (as it is fitt we should) to be satisfied yrin, and reposing especiall trust in your learning and iudgement, haue made choyse of you, to informe us concerning ye nature of ys cause; and do therefore require you to take it presently into yor consideration, and ye scandall, yt may haue risen thereupon: & to certifie us wt in your iudgements ye same may mount vnto, either to any irregularity, or otherwise: and lastly wt meanes may be found to redresse ye same, if need bee. Of all wch poynts we shall expect to haue your reports wth wt diligence and expedition you possibly may. —

Dated at Theobalds Octob. 3. 1621. ——


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

245

May it please your Maty,

Whereas wee receaved a comaund from your Mty under your Royall signet, to deliuer our opinions unto your Mty, whether an irregularity or scandall might arise by ye unfortunate Act, wch God permitted to come to passe by ye hand of ye most reuerend father in God ye L. Archb.p of Cant. shooting in a crossbowe at a Deere in Bramsill Parke; as allso of ye cure & remedy of ye same irregularity: wee do in all lowlines and humility returne this accompt unto yor Maty.

For ye first, whether an irregularity be contracted by this Act in ye person of my L. Archb.p or not; no greater part of our mber could assent and agree: because ye Canons and decrees ymselues are so generall, and so ready to uncertaine distinctions and limitations; ye Doctors and glosses so differing; inferences, and disputes so peculiar to every mans conceit and apprehension; authorityes of Canonists and Casuists so opposite in this very case in hand; yt wee could not returne unto yor Mty any unanimous resolucõ or opinion in the same.

For ye second, whether any scandal may be taken by the weake at home and ye malicious abroad: though most of us beleiue yr was no scandal given by ye sayd right reuend father.

For ye third, wee are agreed not only yt a Restitucõ or dispensation may be graunted by your Mty, either immediatly under

under ye great seale, or (wch most of us in all humility &c.
present unto your Matty) by ye Lands of some Clergy-men
delegated by your Matty to yt purpose, or wt other way your
Matty shall be pleased to extend this favour. But wtall we
are of opinion yt it is most fitting for ye sd Reverend fat-
her, both in regard of his person and ye honor of ye Church
to sue unto your most gratious Matty for ye sd dispensation
in Majorem Cautelam, si qua forte sit irregularitas. All wch
(craving Pardo for our weakness) wee doe in all humblenesse
submitt to ye decision of yor Mtys most profound and incompara-
ble wisdome.

Octob. 30. 1621.

247

The Kings letter to Secretary Calucot.

Right trusty and wellbeloued Councellor wee greet you well. Wee are sory to heare that notwthstanding our reiterated messages to our house of Comons, for going on in ye busines in regard of ye shortnes of time betwen this and Christmas and of your earnest desire yt wee should now conclude a session by making of good & profitable laws; yet ye continue to loose time & now of late upon our gracious answere set vnto ym, haue taken occasion to make more delay in appoynting of our answere and especially concerning ye point in it wch makes mention of your priuiledges.

Our pleasure therefore is yt you shall in our name tell ym yt wee are so lothe to haue time misspent wch is so precious a thing: in ye well using whereof our people may receiue so great a benefit as wee are thus farr contented to descend fro our Royall dignity by explaying at ye time our meaning in our said answere touching ye point yt all our good subiects in yt house yt intend nothing but our honor and ye weale of ye comon wealth may clearly see our intention. When as in our sd answere wee told ym yt wee could not alowe of ye title calling it your auncient and undoubted right and inheritance, but could rather haue wish sd yt ym had sayd your priuiledges were deriued fro ye grace and permission of our auncestors and

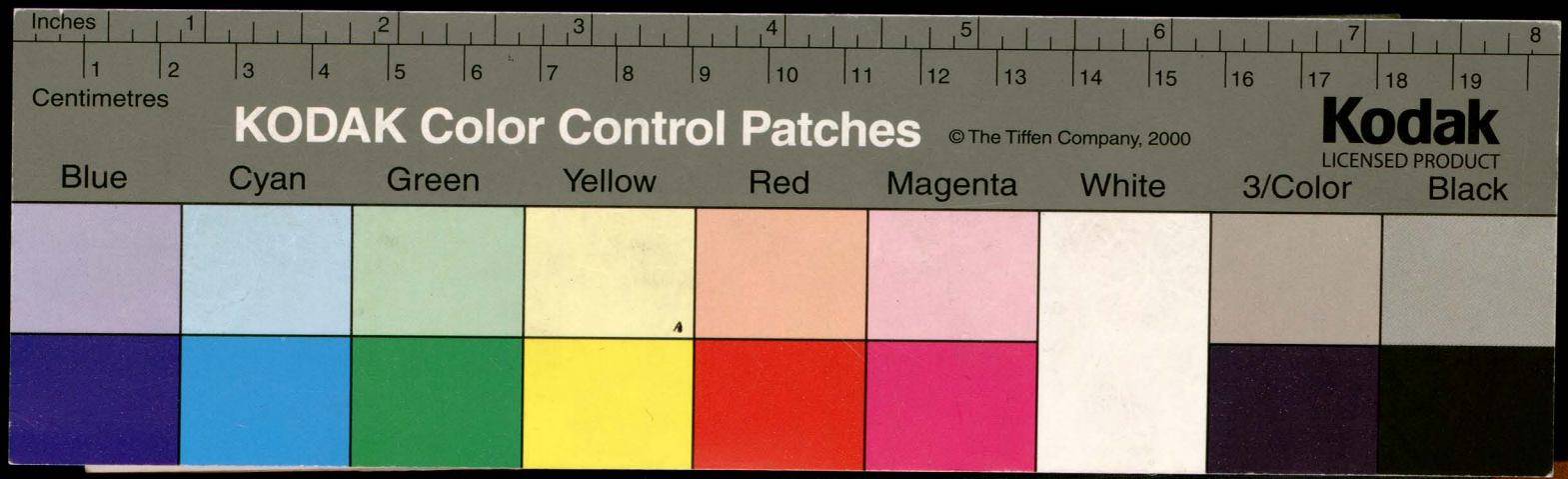
for most of yᵐ grow frō presidents, wᶜʰ showes rather a
tollratiō yᵐ inheritance.

The plaine truth yᵗ wee cā not endure wᵗʰ patience or sub-
iects to use such antemonarchall words how concerning
yʳ liberties except they had subioyned yᵗ yᵗ were granted
unto yᵐ by yᵉ grace and favour of our predecessors
But as for oʳ intentiō yʳⁱ God knowes wee never meant
to deny them any lawfull priviledges yᵗ ever oʳ lovg
inioyed in oʳ predecessors time. As wee expected oʳ sayd
answere should have sufficiently ascraved yᵐ, neither in
iustice wᵗʰ ~~haue~~ so ever yᵗ have undoubted right
unto, nor in grace whatsoever oʳ predecessors owne
have iustly permitted unto yᵐ. And therefore wee
made yᵗ distinctiō of yʳ most part, for wᵗʰsoever
priviledges or liberties yᵗ enioy by any law or sta-
tute shall be ever inviolably preserved by us. and
wee hope oʳ posterity will imitate oʳ footsteps there-
And wᵗʰsoever priviledges yᵗ enioy by longe custome &
uncontrouled and lawfull presidents wee will likewise
be as carefull to preserue yᵐ, and transmitt yᵉ care
yᵒf to oʳ posterity. neither was it any way in oʳ minde
to think of any particular point wherein wee meant
to disalowe of yʳ liberties, so as in iustice wee confesse oʳ
selves to be bound to maintaine yᵐ in yʳ rights. And in
Grace wee are rather minded to encrease yⁿ infringe
any of them if yᵗ should so deserue at our hands

To end therefore as wee begun, lett ym goe on chearefully to yr busines, reiecting yc curious wranglings upō words & syllables: otherwise (wch God forbid) ye world should see how often & how earnestly wee have pressed ym to go on according to yr calling wth those things yt are fit to be done for ye weale of or crowne & Kingdome. And how many carious shifts have ben fro time to time maliciously found out to frustrate us of our good purpose and hinder ym fro ye performance of yt service wch yy owe to us and oor whole kingdome, whereof wn ye Country shall come to be truly enformed, yy will giue ye Author yrof little thanks.

Giuen at or Court at Royston ye 16th of Dec. 1621. Directed

To or right trusty and well beloued Councellour Sr George Caluert Knight one of or principall Secretaryes.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

When I can pay my parents or my Kinge
For life or peace or any dearer thing
Then (dearest Lord) expect my debt to you
Shall be as truely payd as it is due.
But as no other price or recompence
Serues them but loue and my obedience:
So nothing payes my Lord, but wch's above
All reach of Land, tis verlue & my loue.
For wn as goodnesse doth so ouerflowe
The conscience bids not to restore, but owe.
Requitall were praesumtio, and you may
Call me ungratefull wn I strue to pay.
Noe, wth this morall lesson doe I shift
Like one yt meant to saue a better guift
Like very poore, or counterfeit poore men
Who to preserue yr Turky or yr hen
Doe offer up themselues. Noe, I haue sent
A kind of gift will last by being spent
Thanks sterling, fauer above yr bullion rate
Of horses, hangings, iewells, coyne or plate.
Ah you yt should in chusing of yor owne
Knowe a true Diamond from a Bristo, stone.
You yt doe knowe yt are not not alwayes best
In yr intent wch lowdest can protest.

But y^t a prayer fro^m y^e Consolatio^n
Is better y^n y^e Comons Protestatio^n
Trust y^m y^t at your feet y^r lines will lay
And Knowe no arts but to deserue & pray.
Whilst y^e y^t buy preferment wth^out prayinge,
Begin wth^ Briberes & finish wth^ betraying.

Christ-Church y^e present Newyeares
day 1621.

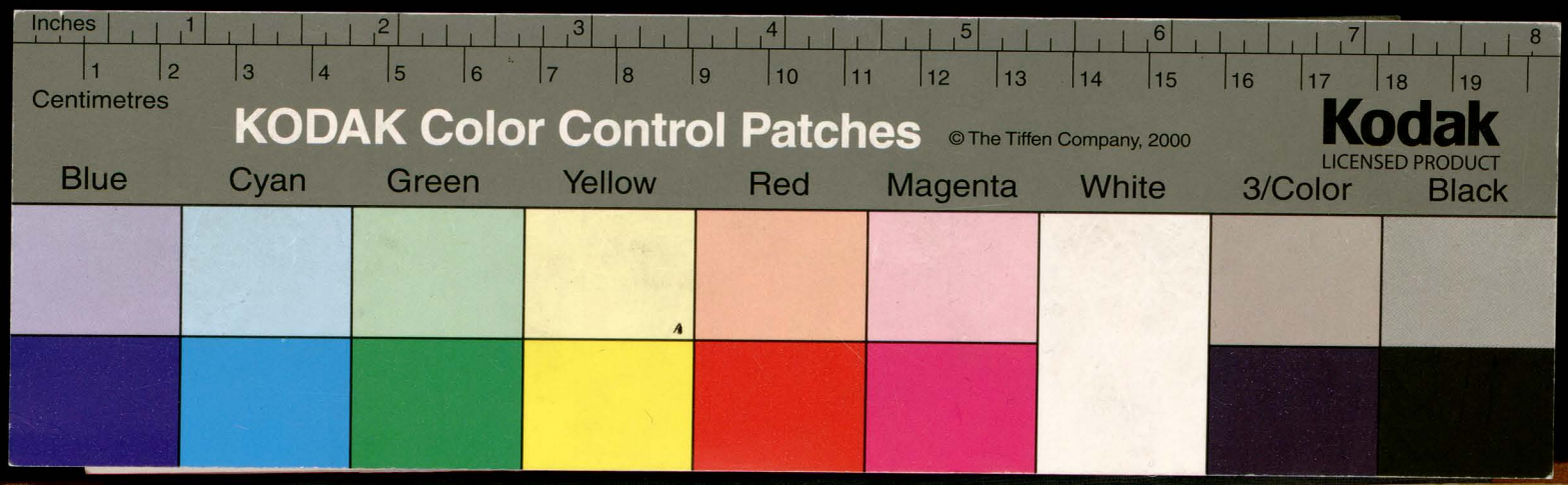
Your Lord^s most humble seruant
to co^mand
Richard Corbet.

An Epitaph.
Vnderneath this sable hearse
Lyes y^e subiect of all verse,
Sydneyes sister, Pembrookes mother,
Death, ere thou hast kild an other
Fayre and learned, good as shee,
Time shall cast a dart at thee.

Marble peeces let no^ma^n rayse
To her name, for after dayes
some kind woeman borne as shee
Reading this like Niobe
Shall turne marble, and become
Both her Mourner & her tombe.

catch me a ~~but~~ star, yt's falling fr the skye
make an immortall creature feare to dye
stop wt thy handes the torrent of the seas
pas wt earths center to ye' antipodes
cause profound Saloud to hunt a Figge
post the dust wt a Spanish fig
make time returne & cal back yesterday
cloath January in the month of may
way out an ounce of flame, blow back the wind
& stop last sound but - a womans mind.

catch me but a falling star
get wt child a mandrak root
tel me where all past yeares are
& who first clouv the Devils foote
cause an unwelk get an Heire
& find a woma xast & faire.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

Sr I can not Wryte to you so often newes as I could wish
I in an Aristocracie, where many governe & consequently ma-
ny participate of y^e intelligence here y^e newes comes but fro
ons or twos at y^e most who diuulge it or suppresse it at
their pleasures; yet may I chance to acquaint you of some-
thing not comon but worth y^or Consideration. Frankendall
in y^e Palatinate hath been besiedged thy 19 dayes. Serge-
ant Maior, Burroughes Governour of y^e towne defended it
bravely w^th 6 or 7 copanies whereof 3 were English. The Bur-
gesses thought many I make account were resting of ap-
ples or turnipps all y^e while. Count Mansfield is
for a certaine come to y^e lower Palatinate & hath
forced Don Gonvaga y^e Spanish Generall to quitte y^e
siedge of Frankendall. Mansfield hath put 4000 into
Worms. The mayne of my Lord Digbyes embassage was to
obtaine fro y^e Emperour y^e restoring of y^e Palatinate or
a Cessatio fro armes. 6 Moneths y^e Emperour gladly hearke-
ned to y^e propositio, and told y^e Empassadour y^t both he
and y^e K. of Spaine were willing to resigne it, he onely
desired y^t before y^e resignatio y^e Marques Spinola & y^e
Infanta might be asked y^r Consent least happily it might
prove inconvenient for y^r affayres in y^e low Countries.

Digby saw he was in y^e^ troup & sought to gett out: he perceaued y^t^ y^e^ Emperours meaning was to vse time to perfect his designes, & therefore tooke leaue of him vnder colour to hastne y^e^ treaty w^th^ y^e^ Infanta & Spinola, but indeed his going was to play him & y^e^ house of Austria a paire of tricks. The first is y^e^: He hastned fro Vienna to y^e^ vpp^r^ Palatinate, where being arriued he found y^e^ Duke of Bauaria & Mansfield vpo a treaty of peace: y^e^ nexe day Mansfield was to subscribe 2 particulars betwixt y^m^, by w^ch^ fact he had totally, & finally ruined the allready miserable K: of Bohemia. Digby went to him & spoke to him y^e^ words Count Mansfield 7 neuer haue other of y^n^ y^n^ of a Cop[er]coat & braue Cauchier, & y^t^ore am lothe so fayre a fame should receaue a staine: 7t y^u^ subscribe to these Conditios offered you: 7 protest before God 7 had rather be your foot boy that now holds y^ur^ horse, & they^t^ Count Mansfield. Moreouer Sr 7 would intreat y^u^ to looke vpo you affayres w^th^ y^e^ inward eyes and then tell me whether of noe y^e^ Emperour will giue you y^e^ honour to Commaund in Chiefe; trust me y^t^ will not you besids y^e^ preseruac^on^ of y^ur^ fame y^u^ shall gaine a true friend of y^e^ K: of England of me a neuer faylinge seruant. w^th^ y^e^ words & (no doubt) seuen promises of future

rewards he diuerted y^e Count fro y^e execuc̃o of his former resolutions. The second trick it y^t; he treated w^th y^e Infanta ing for y^e raysing of y^e siedge before Frankendall. The Infanta made him y^e answere y^t it made directly against y^e reputac̃o of y^e Spanish armes, to rayse a siedge vnlesse by agreemt or siedge Constramed, y^t y^e Spaniyard nether vpō light grounds layes a siedge, nor vpō light grounds rayses it. Moreouer she assured him she had a triple Voyce, y^e K. of Spaine & Spinola hauing y^e greater parts, it being due to one by a Soueraine power, and to y^e other by a long experience in armes. now ye iest is y^t before he treated w^th her for raysing y^e siedge he knew it was allready rayssed. He pawned all his plate in y^e Palatinate to pay y^e Souldiers. they haue since taken it fro pawne and coyned it ~~duct~~ amounted to 20000^li w^ch y^e K. is contented to make up 40000^li y^e truth of it is he must pay all y^e Souldiers in y^e Palatinate or casheere them for y^e Dutch Burgers of Heydelburgh feare y^t haue no more mony. The K. hath comaunded y^e Lord Digby to wryte in his name to y^e Generalls & comaunders & to encourage y^m y^e more, he assures y^m y^t at y^e Spring he will haue a solid peace or an vniuersall warre. If I could yet I durst not send you y^e copy of those letters, least my friends might suffer, it is enough to haue y^e contents of a letter, y^e forme making nothing to a mans knowledge.

The armies in Flanders & y^e countreys of Iuliers haue yet done nothing worthy a time. They haue twice gon ouer all y^e

Chymneys, every chymny payeng 25 shillings towards ye cõtinuance of ye warrs. & heare in Holland yt every one yt eateth Salt payes as much; wch as much to say more but Children are exempted. The marriage of ye Spanie all wise me have held dyet The Duke of Lerma & ye last Kinges Confessor were ye first & chiefe promoters of it, & theire fortunes going backward will hinder ye marriage: A Spanish gent of good credit told me yt it concerneth ye Some of ye Emperour is contracted to ye yonge Infanta; ye reason ye thy; & ye Emperours Some was cõtracted to her dead sister, and therefore tis likely he is betrothed to ye. The necessity of ye Austrian line being now more urgent, yn wn his sister was living. you know Sr wt shifts ye house of Austria hath made to keepe yr game fayre. Now noble Sr I could discourse to you. ye backe doore by wch ye Spanieyard meanes (wn he hath abused ye K his will) to giue him ye slip. He will plead ye Popes disalowance of ye match & his obedience to ye Church shall excuse: nay comend his breach of oathe & promise. The Lord Digby goeth presently for Spaine for most of his followers stay at Calice untill his returne by his so speedy dispatch, & iudge they finde meanes to war it out to ye last nick. & Hay as one of those whome Tacitus speaketh of in his 12th of his Annalls. Vim differunt potiorē dolō arbitrātur. There is a Country in ye worlde yt is like to a watch, yt hath hung against a wall 19 yeare

yeares & ÿ rusty for want of keeper & would vse to polish it. It ÿ not yet ÿ^e 4^th part of an age since all things might want right. What shall wee say unlesse ÿ^e K^ç be blinded as reason, he would not prorogue ÿ^e Parliament till February, if he shall make warre w^th tyme will he have to provide ÿ^e innumerable things necessary to a warre. I feare he will one day taste of ÿ^e fatability of delays. It ÿ ÿ^e most ridiculous thing ÿ^t ever Iuncke into many head once to thinke ÿ^t Spaniyard will surrender ÿ^e Palatinate. Bauaria possesse all ÿ^e vper Palatinate the Spaniyard way faire for ÿ^e remainder he having left but 3 towns unconquered. Who sees not that all thy time he hath talked of restoring, he hath still sought to win more. He way not a foole ÿ^t sayd ÿ^e Frenchman after ÿ^e Conquest of a Country skips out againe like asflea: the Dutchma crauls out like like a louse, but ÿ^e Spaniyard like a Crablouse sticks so fast ÿ^t ÿ^r ÿ no fetching him out but by pulling away skin and all. I asked ÿ^e other day of an understanding spaniyard whether or no he thought the K. would resigne ÿ^e Palatinate: he laughed & answered me they; ÿ^e Spaniyard of all Nations vnder ÿ^e Sun have ÿ^e best stomach for what they once swallow they never cast up againe. The Spanish Legat here and ÿ^e Lord Digby made a rough encounter but parted faire. The Spanish Embassador told my Lord Digby he hoped he had bin a favourer of ÿ^e house of Austria: Now he saw ÿ^e contrary he told him he never stood all his plots together w^th all ÿ circumstances, how he caused Mansfield to breake of

the treaty betwixt him & y^e Duke of Bauar. and how he had
let such a diuisiō betwixt y^e cōmaunders of Mansfields army
y^t in case he would come to agreament. it lay not in
his power. Digby confessed all and told him he would put his
Embassage in print, y^t all y^e world might see how fairely,
how openly, & how constantly he had behaued himselfe for y^e
good & quiet of Christendome: He affirmed if he had most
reason to coplaine of y^e King his master y^t y^e K. of Spaine his
since promised y^t y^e Palatinate should be restored backe to y^e true
Owner. But he kept not his promise y^t y^e K. his master would
endure these delusions noe longer but would demaund a reason
of these abuses: y^e Spanish Leger replyed y^t his master of
England might doe as it pleased him, y^t y^e K. of Spaine
hath had England, Fraunce, & y^e low Countries enimyes at once
& yet for all y^t Spaine left not to be y^e greatest Monar-
chie in y^e Christian world, yet (replyed Digby) you can not
shew me in any Countrey Cronicle y^t a Constable of England
hath gon into spaine to beg a peace. He hit y^e Spaniard
on y^e sore, for indeed the Constable came into Englād to y^t
end. Digby hath carried himselfe well in y^e upshot of y^e bu-
sinesse, but in y^e begining he was palpably gulled. He and my
Lord of Doncha[illegible] have one fault w^ch is y^t they are catechi-
zed in y^e Politiques by so simple a fellow as T. M. For on
my life he is no other, he & I have great, I finde him like
a stately Morochpana made for shew not having any taste
he is a formall foole & I protest y^e wisedome of those 2
Lords

Lords is by me much suspected in yt I know he is yr oracle
for matter of state yt hide nothing fro him, & he ꝯceals
nothing fro ye Jesuiticall Fathers. He hath (no doubt) seene
much, read much & conferred much, but I doubt he
hath either made bad use of these advantages or else ye Fa-
thers & priests have made him an asse. He read poli-
tique letters to ye 2 English Embassadors followers, he show-
ed his judgement in chusing so capiable an auditorie
yr being not one of ym fit for any other imployment yn
to rost an egge. / a Gentileman of yt towne fitted to Sr
G. Ch. wth a complement for the Infanta. shee will tell
you (sayth he) Sr G. that she is sory you come in such a
mourning time, that shee can not give you more co-
tent yn now shee can to wch you must reply, yt yu are
not able to stand so neare ye sun if it were not clow-
ded it happened yt she sayd ye first, & he replyed ye other
to her by an interpretour some. Shallow head or other hath
counselled ye K. to send hither an Embassadour wth yn ye In-
fanta was a free Princesse; yn hee had here an agent
now shee is but Gouvernesse of ye Country & but an Executor
of Spinola & ye Spanish Leyers will we must ~~and~~ in all
the last have an Embassadour. Where art thou Judgement?
You know I am sure yt ye Secretaries of state dilivers ye packets
to ye Admirall his Secretarie & comes to him againe saw fro
him hath ye answere of ye K. & ye Pr. avgues. You can not but know
yt ye Spanish Embassadors lies passe any mo & post as well ye hands
of our prime Counsellers, By ye meanes he furnisheth

yᵉ Seminaries & Nurseries of treason of yᵉ side & yᵉ sea
I rest yours

Vowed Servant
Nicolas Nemo.

Sweete Heart.

Being full of Busines, I could not wright so often as I would, yet if you but looke over y^t leafe, you shall see I have not bin altogether unmindefull of you. It was your request I should send you some songs, but my heart is not yet set upō a merry pinne, I doe not joy so much in y^e estate I hope for in y^e Kingdome, as I envie your mans Toms happines in y^t he lies in a Country where he may have wholsome ale for his money, & a handsome milk-mayde to his mistris. I feare if it should please God to settle me a fortune here, y^t Duell would make me run away from it; for to live here but a little while were to live in heaven for ever after. The forbidden fruite w^th golden sides dwels not on y^e side Tweede, & folly it were for Sathan to tempt me w^th any thing else: nothing but women hath power over me, & nothing here seemes so ugly to me; of them hereafter. I will not now trouble you w^th a long letter, because of y^e tedious y^t followes. remember my true love to my kinde pupill, and tell her, I desire (as ever I may deserve well at her hands) y^t in her next letter, shee will remember my humble service to my most honoured M^ris. I could not wish to be K^i of Scotland, unlesse it were to make her a Queene. Commend me kindly to your Cosen, & forgett not I intreate my service to noble S^r John Mullinax, & my love to his kind brother. I have at y^e time only sent you a breife discourse of y^e kindome w^th y^e nature and condition of the people, if I may understand of y^e receipte hereof, I shall continue y^e story further. I desire to heare from you at London at M^r Harberts, where I intende shortly to be, but shal make a short staye: I shal goe & returne by sea. After my

Comming

cõmge hither again you shall ỹ heare newes fro Dametas; &
thus I haste to cõmit you to what follows.

First for ỹe Country I must confes 't is too good for those that
inhabite it, & too bad for others to be at ỹe charge of co-
quering it. The ayre & might be wholsome, but for ỹe stinking
people ỹt live in it, & ỹe ground might bee good, had they
wit to manure it. Their beasts generally are small, wo-
men excepted, of wch sort there's no greater in ỹe world.
There is greate store of fowle, as foule howses, foule lime
fowle dishes, & pots, foule trenshers & napkins, foule sheets &
shirts, wth wch sort of fowle, wee had like to fare as ỹe
Children of Israël did wth ỹr fowle in ỹe wilderness. They
have greate store of fish too, & good for those ỹt can eat
it rawe: but if it come once into ỹr hands, 't is presently three
dayes old. For ỹr butter & cheese, I'le not meddle wth it at this time
nor noe man at any time ỹt loves his life. They have likewise
great store of deere, but ỹ are so far of from ỹe places where
I have bin, as ỹt I hade rather believe it ỹn goe to discover it
I confesse all ỹe deere I mett wth all was deare lodging, deare
horse-meate, deare Tobacco and English beare. As for fruit,
for ỹe Grandame Eues sake ỹ never planted any: and for other
trees had Christ bin betrayd in ỹs Country (as no doubt he should
have bin, had he come as a stranger among them) Judas had
sooner found ỹe grace of repentance, ỹn a tree to hang himselfe
on. They have many hills, wherein ỹ tell men ỹ much trea-
sure, but they shew none of it, Nature hath only discovered to
them some ming of coale, to shew to wth end shee created ỹm.
I see but little grasse, but onely in ỹr porradge, & no flowers,
but

but such as modesty forbids me to name: ye thistle was not giuen them for naught for 'tis ye fayrest flower in ye garland. The word Hayce is heathen Greeke to them, neither man nor beast knowes wt it meanes. Corne is reasonable plentiful at ye time, for since they heard of ye Kings coming, it hath bin as unlawful for ye comō people to eate wheate, as it was of old for any but ye Priests to eate ye Shew-bread. They prayed much for his comming & long fast for his well-fare. All his followers were welcome but ye Guard, those they say looke like Pharaohs lene Kine, & threatne a dearth where soeuer they come. They would perswade ye footmen yt oaten Cakes were good to make yᵐ longwinded, & ye Children of ye Chappell yt haue brought to eate of them for ye maintenaunce of yr voyces. They say our Cookes are to sauey & for groomes and Coatchmen they wish them to giue yr horses no worse then they would eat themselues. They comend ye braue minds of ye Pensioners & Gentlemen of ye Chamber, who choose rather to goe to ye tauerns, yn to be allwayes eating of ye Ks prouision. They likewise comend ye Yeomen and pages of ye butterey & sellar for yr retiredneese and silence in yt they will heare twenty knock before they will answeare one. They perswade ye Trumpeters yt fasting is good for men of yr quality, for emptines say they, causeth winde, & winde say they, makes ye Trumpets sownd sweetly. The bringing of Heraulds they say was a needles charge, for they all knowes his pedegree well enough: and ye harbingers might haue bin spared, since he brought so many beds along wth him, & of two euils since ye lesser is to be chosen, yt wth ye beds may remaine wth them, & ye poore harbingers keepe yr places, & doe yr office as they returne. His hangings yt likewise desire should remaine here as reliques to putt yᵐ allwayes in remembrance of his Mty, & yt promise to dispence wth ye woulen Ima-

ges

gigs therein, but for ye grauen Images in ye new beutified Chappell, yt threatne to pull them downe soone after his departure, & make of them a burnt offering to appease ye indignatiō they imagine is conceiued against them in yo breast of ye Almighty for suffering such Idolatry to enter yr Kingdome. The Organs I thinke will finde mercy, because, as I say, yrs some affinity betwixt them and ye bag-pipe: ye skippier yt brought ye singing men, wth their Vestments, coplaines yt hee hath bin much troubled wth a strange ringing in his heade, euer since yey came a boord ship, for remidy whereof ye Pastour of his Parish hath perswaded him sell ye profaned Vessells and distribute ye mony amongst ye Faithfull Brethren. For his Mtys entertainement, I must cōfesse ingenuously: he was receiued into ye Parish of Edenborough (for a Citty I can not name it) wth great shouts of ioy, but no shewes of Charge, for pageants y hold them Idolatrous things, & not fit to be used in so reformd a place. Fro ye Castle they gaue him some pieces of Ordinance (wch surely he gaue ye Castle since he was K. of England) & at ye entrace thy presented him wth a golden Basen, wch was carryed before him on mens shoulders to his pallace (ye place indeed fro whence I think it came) they protested yt if Christ weare come fro heauen hee could not haue bin more welcome, & I believe it, for his Mty came but to cumō them to a Parliament & Christ would haue cumond them to Judgement wch they desire not to heare of. He was conueyed by ye yonkers of ye towne (wch were some 109 halber deeres, deerely shall they rue it in respect of ye charge) to ye high Crosse & to ye high Church where ye only bell they had stood on tiptoe to behold his fayre face, where I must intreate you to spare him for an howre, since there I confesse I left him. In ye meane tyme to report ye speeches of ye people concerning his newe sampled intertainment were to make

Vestments.

make thy discourse as tedious to you, as ye Sermō seemd to those yt were constrain'd to heare it and endure it. After ye preachment he was conducted by ye same halberdeers to his pallace of ye wch I forbeare to speak because it is a place sanctified by his diuine Mty, only I wish it had bin Walsingwths for my friends sake yt wayted on him. To bring ye Mayor backe to his lodging (who all this while accompanied his Mty) were too much to amplifie my story; I will only briefly and faithfully speake of ye people according to there degrees and qualitie.

For ye Lords Spirituall they may well be so called, for indeed they are neither Fish nor flesh, but wt it shall please ye Earthly God ye King to make them: obedience they hold to bee better yn sacrifice. They make a mockery at Marlindons, saying yt Xt was to dy for them & not for Xt, they will rather subscribe yn surrender, & dispence wth small things yn trouble themselues wth disputations: they will rather acknowledge ye King to be their head, yn want where wth to pamper yr bodyes, they haue taken great paines and trauel to compasse yr Bisss and yt will not loose ym for a trifle. For ye poore Deacons whose deserts will not lift them to dignities, all yr study is to disgrace those yt are got ye least degree before them & because they can not write Bishop, they proclame they neuer read of any. The Scripture say they, speakes of Deacons and Elders but not a word of Deans or Bishops. Their disgrace is full of detraction, their Sermons rayling; conclusions, heresie or treason. For ye religion they haue it is aboue my reach, & God willing I will not stretch for it. They Christen wthout ye crosse, marry wthout a ring, receiue ye sacrament wthout reuerence dye wthout repentance, and burry wthout diuine seruice.

They

They keep no Holy-dayes nor acknowledge any Saint, but St Andrew who they say got y^t by presenting X^t w^th an Oaten Cake after his 40 dayes fast. They say likewise y^t he that translated our English bible was y^e some of a Maltster, because he speakes of a miracle done w^th barly loaves, whereas they say y^t were Oaten cakes, & no other bread of y^t quantity could have satisfied for many 1000 people. They use no prayer at all for they say 'tis needlesse, God knowes their wants w^thout pratting, & w^ht he does he long to doe freely. Their Sabaoth dayes exercise is preaching in y^e morning and pursuing their Backbyters in y^e Evening. They goe to Church in y^e forenoone to heare y^e law, & to y^e craggs & mountaines after dinner to howze themselves, They hold y^r nose if you talk of beare-bayting, they stop y^r eares if you speake of a play. Fornication they hold a pas-time wherein mans ability is approved & sterility or fertility of Woman is discovered: at adultery they shake y^r head, theft they rayle at, murder they wink at, blasphemie they laugh at. They think it is impossible to misse y^e way to heaven, if they can but leave Rome behind them: to bee opposite to y^e Pope is to be presently w^th God. To conclude I am fully perswaded y^t if Christ and his angels at y^e last day should come down in y^r whyte garments, they would runne away & cry; The Children of y^e Chappell are come againe to torment us, let us flye the y^e abomination of these boyes, & hide us in y^e mountaines.

For y^e Lords temporall, & temporizinge Gentlemen, if I were apt to speak ill of any, I could not speake much of them, only I must let you know they are no Scotchmen; for so soone as they

fall from yᵉ breasts of yᵉ beasts yʳ Mothers, yᵉ careful sire
posts them away for Fraunce, where as they passe, yᵉ sea suck
from them wᵗʰ they had suckt from yʳ rude Dammes. There
they gather new flesh, new blood, new mamars, there they
learne to cõplement, to stand, to speake, to discourse, to Congie
to Court women: there they leavẽ to put on their cloathes, yᵗ
come by England to get them, & yᵗ returne into Scotland to
weare them. They spar'd for no Cost for honour of yᵉ Kinge
for no complementall courtesie to make Welcome our Coun-
trey-men. Their followers are their fellowes, yʳ wiues yʳ
slaues, yʳ horses, yʳ Mistresse, & yʳ swords yʳ Judges. By reasõ
whereof they have but few Lawyers and those not rich.
Their Parliaments hold but 3 dayes, yʳ statutes are but 3 lines, &
a Suite is determined in 3 words. The Wonders of yᵉ Kingedome
are these, yᵉ Lord Chancelour is beloued & honored: The Mʳˢ
of yᵉ Rolls is well spoken of, & yᵉ whole Counsell who are
yᵉ Judges are free from suspiciõ of Corruptiõ. The Coun-
trey though it be mountanous, affoords no monsters but wo-
men: of wch yᵉ great ones (as Countesse & Ladyes) are kept
in Iron grates like Lions: The Marchiants wiues are likewise
prisoners, like our English boare Francks, through wch some-
time 'peeping to catch yᵉ ayre, wee are allmost choaked wᵗʰ
yᵉ sight of them. The greatest madnesse amonge yᵉ men
is yʳ Iealousy; in yᵗ yᵗ feare to loose wᵗʰ no man yᵗ hath but
2 of his senses will seeke to get. The Ladyes are of yᵗ opiniõ
yᵗ Susanna could not be chaste of her body, because she bath-
ed so often. Pride is a thing bread in yʳ bone & yʳ flesh

naturally

naturally abhorres cleanlines. Their breath cõmõly stinks of porradge, yr linnen of pisse, yr hands of Piggs-troords, yr body of Sweat, & it is a position of Bellarmine to weare socks. A fucus or dentifrice are things yt dreame not of, yr oyntments most frequent amongst them is brimstone & butter for scabs, & oyle of bayes & Stanc-ackers for yr lice. Wch sinne of curiosity (sweet heart) is but new crept into yr Kingdome, & I think will not long continue. I protest (Sweet Heart) I had rather be yr meanest Servant of 24 to my pupils Chamber-maid, yn be yr Mr Minion to yr fayrest Countesse I have yet discovered of. To draw you downe by degrees from yr Citizens wives to yr Country-Gentlewomen & so convey you to yr cõmon dames were to bring you from New-gate to Bride-Well. The despised Dames of Sea-coale-Lane yt cõverse with ragges & Navy-bones are things of immortall race. Every whore in Hownsditch is a Helena, & yr greasy bands in Turne-ball Greekish Dames in comparison of those.

I finde my paper in a Consumption, wch makes me curtall this discourse, & therfore to cõclude, The men of old did no more wonder yt yr great messias should be borne in so poore a towne as Nazareth in little Galalee, as I doe, yt so brave a Prince as K. James should be borne in so stinking a towne as Edenborough in lowzy Scotland.

Leith neere Edenborough
20th of June 1617.

{

Mense Febr: 1622.

Sacra Cæsarea Mtas Dominus noster clementissimus
maturè diligenterq; perpensis atq; excussis rationibus quæ-
quàm sanè arduis, quibus permota sua Sanctitas per
nuntium extraordinarium Dominum Fabricium etc honorem
titulum, et dignitatem Electoralem proscripto Palatino iam
adimptam, ad Religionem in Imperio stabiliendam in
Serenissimum Bauariæ Ducem authoritate Imperiali citra
moram transferri enixè postulat, aliter non potest quàm
ut imprimis dilectas suæ Sanctitati gratias agat, quòd
verè paternam sollicitudinem suam in afflictum Germa-
niæ statum tam luculento honorifico legationis indicio
explicare voluit. Rem ipsam quod attinet, sibi persua-
det Mtas Cæsarea iam tum Sanctitati suæ innotuisse uti
in eum ipsum scopum Imperialis quoq; prouidentia colli-
mârit, ac primò supradictũ Bauariæ Ducem, diploma-
te super Electoratu expedito, et ad manus consignato,
iampridem securum reddiderit. Cæterùm quo minus hæc
suæ Mtis intentio hactenus publicata, Ipseq; Dux in sep-
tem-virale Collegium hactenus introductus fuerit, gra-
uissimæ sanè causæ rationesq; obstitêre, et etiam nunc
obstant quæ ipsimet Bauariæ Duci tanti ponderis visæ
sunt, ut pro singulari suâ prudentiâ hoc turbulento
et periculoso rerum statu vlteriorem diplomatis sibi con-
cessi effectum urgendum non iudicet, sed ante omnium
vtrinq; suspectionem, siquidem honestis et tolerabilibus
conditionibus obtineri possit, amplectendam; tum verò
de vniuersâ re, an, et quatenus proscriptus in gratiam re-
cipiendus sit, tractationem instituendam curet.
Quocum Serenissima quoq; Hispaniarum Infantis in Belgiâ
et Regis ipsius Catholici consilia inclinant. Quæ cum Magnæ
Britanniæ Regi sua Mtas per Allegatum suum iam significan-
da curauit, merito tum illius tractationis, tum Hungaricorũ
Comitiorũ (quibus quid de pace in illo regno denig; statuendũ
sit cognoscet) eventus expectandus. Quòd si prædicto cum
Angliæ

Anglia Rege tractatu hoc obtinebitur (quemadmodu
sua Ma^tas una cum ipso Duce Bauariæ eo conuertet) ut
Palatinus proscriptus una cum fratre et liberis dignitate
Electorali exutus maneat, nulla in suâ Ma^te de religio
mora erit, quo minus Bauariæ Dux in ipsam dictæ Elector
alis prærogatiuæ plenariam possessionem introducatur:
Sin usco alia ratione quàm bello id confici non possit,
iam quidem sua Ma^tas facile prouidet, Catholicorum a
rarijs exhaustis, prouincijs desolatis, exercitus Regis Ca
tholici in diuersis distracto, Copijs Ma^tis suæ Cæsareæ
maximopere diminutis quanti discriminis ac periculi in
id tempus tale bellum (quod uniuersam Germaniam
concutiet) futurum sit. In quod bellum antequam
sua Ma^tas descendat et Regij: et Catholicorum omnium
intercidit, tempestiuè scire, quibus et quantis quantoq
tempore duraturis auxilijs opus est; quo commodius
rationes inire, et omnia tanto moli sustinendæ oppor
tuna tanto accuratius prouideri queant, ne bello tem
rariè sumpto quod religiui est in Germaniâ cui (a quo
ne nunc quidem procul abest) in extremum discrimen præ
cipitetur. Præter hoc maximopere sentit opportunum sua
Ma^tas (quod obnixè etiam à suâ Sanctitate efflagitat) ut
supremâ suâ authoritate apud Principes, Reges, et Res
publicas Christianas sanctè et diligenter interpositâ, pro
curare velit ne intentio et conatus Ma^tis suæ Cæsareæ
et Serenissimi Regis Hispaniarum Catholici aliorum
qui in huius belli societatem conuerrent, sinistris offici
æmulationibus, cum publicis tum priuatis, aut hostili
quarum infestatione deturbantur. Et hunc quidem
mentis suæ sensum Ma^tas Cæsarea pro negotij grauitate
et communi cum sua Sanctitate sollicitudine Domino Legato
Apostolico, cui benevolentiam suam Imperialem de
mentissimè offert significare voluit.

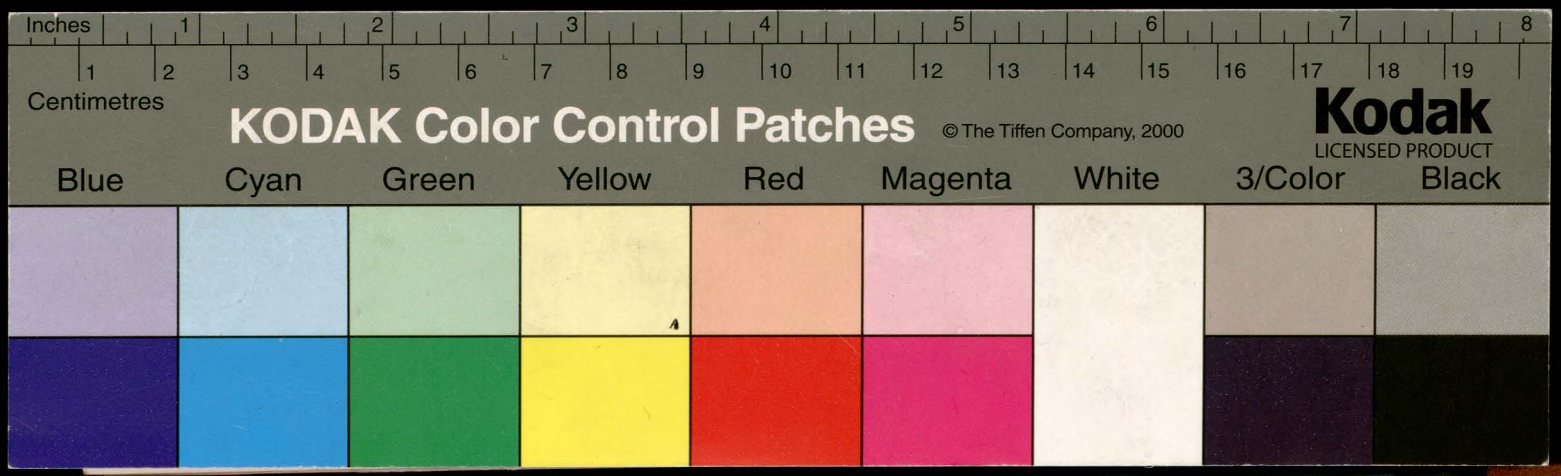
A letter sent to Colonell Gray the 5th of May 1622.

Although I gaue not sufficient Militaricke Kipp to yor from pointe to pointe, low, wtsoeu, and wtsen this glorious battaile was ranged yet sure I am De Tillie hath lost dead in the field 6000 braue souldie[rs].

The first victorie had not end, when my former letters ffame vnto you; but continued 3 dayes in the pursuite of them. and some killed heere and there by the Kinges forces others forced to the Hills and there starued. others fled to the Rheine in hope to escape but prouented by the Marques of Budins forces who hath taken all passages, and a bridge made by them ouer the Rheine so the truth is that Tillie his Armie is quite defeated and himselfe hurte in the head and the small remainder left with him forced to retreite into Limsum.

The 3 day after the first ouerthrow the towne was taken by the King and all put to the sword of his souldie[rs], and himselfe taken prisoner and brought to Heidelberge the place so much threatned of him of vtter ruine, is now his Prison but as yet doe heare since removed to Manheime.

The King hath carried himselfe bravely in this Action in the hazard of his person, and hetto but not hurte. the Mounte Maunsfield hauinge ordered their seruice to his eternall glorie: and Tyllie with his souldie[rs] were not wantinge in Courage, but stoutely defended themselues and offended vs for a longe time, hauing beaten the Duke of Wymarke ouertrant who that day had the Vantguarde


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

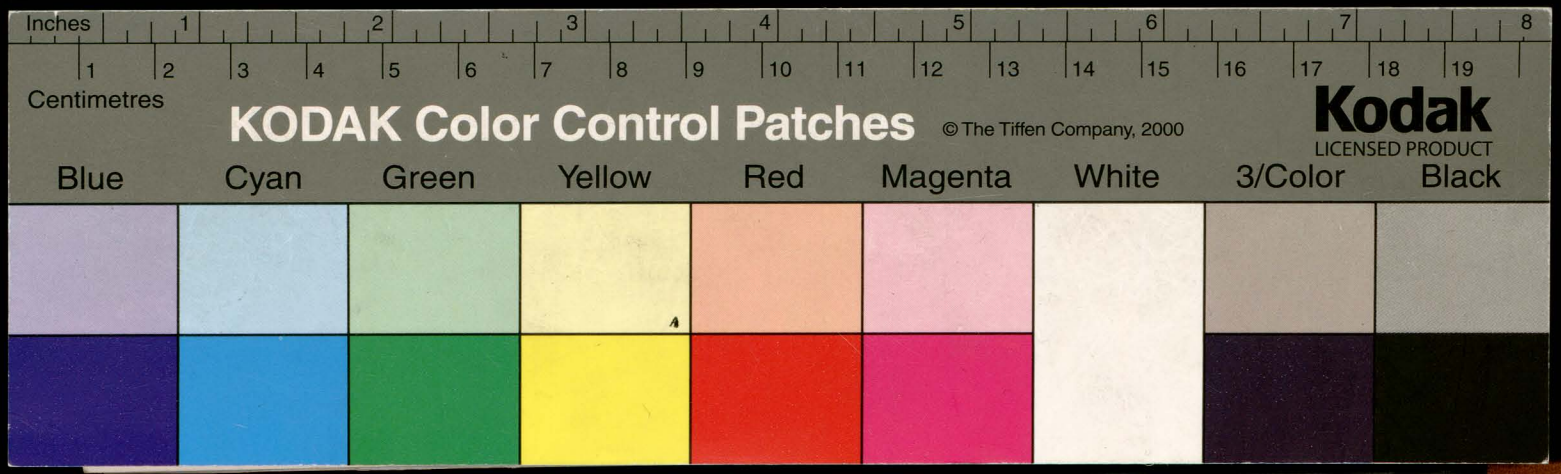
The Copie of the Letter written by Earle
Mansfeild to Sr. Horacio Vere.

Sr.

The greate affection you beare both the Service of his
Matie. doth well merritt, that I make you acquainted
of the happie successe God hath given us against
our Enemies. Within a mile of this Princes
neere a Village called Wingkestein, was Count on-
Counted w[i]th Tilly, in the Rear encounter was
slaine a greate number of the Enemie and soe,
amongst the rest were a greate multitude of
Officers, Wee have taken a Colonell and multi-
tude greate officers taken prisoners a greate many
of Souldiers. And taken with us 16 mony Cornetts
and Ensignes, Fower pieces of greate ordinance
Tilly was amongst the troupes, if he bee not
dead at last he is sore hurt. If wee could ha
we had them in the open fields wee had done
for them above halfe, wee hope that God
will give us greate in Grace time to obtaine
the Wee victorie

Yo[r] humble Servant
Ernest Earle of Mansfeild

This 2d Aprill 1622.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

1. I came from England into France,
Neither to learne to cringe nor dance,
Nor yet to ride nor fence:
Nor yet to see strange sights as those
wch haue returnd wthout a nose,
They carryd out from hence.

2. But I to Paris rode alonge,
Iust like John D'ory in ye songe,
Upon an holy Tide:
For I an ambling Nagge did get,
I thinke he is not payd for yet,
I spurrd him on each side.

3. And to St. Dennis first wee came
To see ye sights at Nostre-dame:
The man yt shewes them snuffles.
Where who is apt for to believe,
May see St Marys right hand sleeue,
And her old Pantophles.

4. Her haire, her milke, her Very gowne,
Which shee did weare in Bethlem Towne,
Wm in ye Time shee lay:
Yet all ye World knowes that's a fable,
For so rich cloaths neve lay in stable,
Upon a cock of Hay.

5. Nor Carpendour could by his trade
Get so much coyne as to haue made
A Gowne of so rich stuffe:

Yet they poore fooles thinke for her credit
They must believe old Joseph did it,
'Cause shee deserv'd enough.

6. There is y^e^ Lanthorne w^ch^ y^e^ Jewes,
W^hm^ Judas Iscd y^m^ first did use:
It weighs my weight downe right:
But to believe it you must thinke,
The Jewes did put a Candle in't,
And then t'was wanderous light.

7. There is one of y^e^ Crosses nayles,
W^ch^ who so sees his Comes Nayles,
And if he list may kneele:
Some say t'was false, t'was never so,
Yet seeing it thus much I knowe,
It is as true as steele:

8. There's one y^t^ there hath left his toes;
Another's head but not his nose,
An elbowe and a thumme:
And w^hn^ wee had seene these holy raggs,
Wee went to y^e^ Inne, and tooke our nags
And so away did come.

9. Wee came to Paris on y^e^ Seine:
'T is wonderous faire but seldome cleane:
'T is Europes greatest Towne:
How strong it is I need not tell it,
For all y^e^ World may easily smell it,
That walkes up and downe.

10. There's many strange sights for to see:
The Palace, y^e long Gallary
The house y^e Queene doth build,
St. Innocents whose earth devours
Dead corps in 24 howres;
And there y^e King was kild.

11. For learning th' university,
And for old cloaths and frippery
Place Royall doth excell:
The new bridge and y^e statue there
At Nostre-dame St Christopher
Whose steeple beare y^e Bell.

12. The Bastylle and y^e Demy streete
The Chastean wst like London ~~streete~~
The Arsemall's no toy:
But if you would see y^e prittiest thing
Goe to y^e Court and see y^e King:
O 't is a hopefull boy.

13. He is (by all his Dukes and Peeres)
Reverenc'd as much for Wit as yeares:
Nor must you thinke it much:
For he wth little Swisse doth play
And doth make pies of Durt and clay;
O! never King made such.

14. A bird y^t can but kill a flee,
Or prate doth please his Ma^ty
'T is knowne to every one:

The Duke of Guise gaue him a Parke
And he had twenty Cānons for it
For his newe Gallion.

15. O yt I might but haue ye happe
To gett ye bird wch in ye mappe
Is called ye Indian Rucke.
Ide giue it him and hope to bee,
As great and wise as Luins and hee,
Or els I had ill lucke.

16. Birds rownd about his chamber stands,
And them he feeds wth his owne hands
(This his humility.)
And if they do want any thing
They do but whistle for yr King
And he comes presently.

17. Now for these Vertuous parts he must
Intituled bee Lewis ye Iust,
Great Henerys right heire:
And to his stile they adde more words:
They mostly call him King of Birds,
In steed of lost Nauarr.

18. He hath besides a pretty trick
Taught him by Nature for to worke
In Iron wth great ease:
Some-times vnto his forge he goes
And there he knocks and there he blowes
And makes both locks and keyes.

19 Wch puts a doubte in euery one

whether

Whether he were Mars or Vulcans sonne,
Sith few believe hy Mother:
But let them all say what they will.
I am resolv'd I shal think still
As much y^s one as y^e other.

20. The people doe dislike y^e youth
Alleadging reasons for in truth
Mothers should honour'd bee.
Yet some say that he loues her rather,
As much as ne'r shee lou'd y^e father,
And y^t's notoriously.

21. The Queene's a pretty little wench,
But borne in Spaine speakes little French:
Shee's ne'r like to be Mother:
For her incestuous house could not
E'r yet haue children vnles got,
By Vnkle or by brother.

22. Then why should Lewis being so iust
(Were he content to take hy lust
Wth hy de Lums Mate)
Suffer hy pretty little Queene
From all her race y^t yet hath beene
So to degenerate.

23. 'Tis charity for to be knowne,
'T loue others children as hy owne,
And to keepe them too 's no shame:
Vnlesse y^t hee will greater bee
Then was hy Father Henry,
Who men say did y^e same.

Kodak Color Control Patches © The Tiffen Company, 2000 LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue Cyan Green Yellow Red Magenta White 3/Color Black
Inches Centimetres

In L. Elizabeth

Kings, Queens, Nymphs, Virgins eyes
See where your mirrour lyes
In whome her friends have seene
A Kings state in a Queene
In whom her sex surveyd
A mans heart in a mayde
whome best men for her virtue
Should grow to thinke some deitie
Heaven hence by death did summon
To show shee was a woman.

August 10th 85

although by the generall Letter you will heare the
sad truth of our misfortunes: our condition of
mind mentioned, yet it my duty to write
these few lines on the same Argument
all affairs were full of sure[illegible]
the treacherous Irishmen after 4 years
peace and free intercourse of Commerce
city as if one Nation, by a generall
combination made abourd to subvert,
her wch in one day, some
entering as friends under colour of
truking and so taking their ad-
vantage, others drawing of more all
broake upon them at once and the
first falling upon those that were
at their Labor, Captain Barkley
a gentleman wch for vertue was
equall to his birth and his industry
by his trust, suffered under their cruell
ty, wth almost all of his Iron men, & oth-
ers — Corpes sucke by the same treason
were [illegible] it the
would save him drawne to support wch com-
fortunes; wth those were deplore
the loss of Captaine Nat: Lawill —
Doubt saved wth all his family,
Mr Meadow suffered in their house his
wife & divers of his servants & strangers,
but E particularly mention in
that of the Council, Mr Lotte

some few dayes before by a naturall death was relieved, from the[se] troubles, and my Lord is returned from the yates of death to give you a ffloorishing relation of that Massacar, Murthur findred a ye[a]rs Counta[n]ce of so weak sorte and the worst blow, nor shed w[i]t[h]stand Damar mute, better the slaughter had bin done, still, if god had not put it into the heart of an Indian belonging to one Perry to disclose it who living in Paro's house, was urged by an other that had intyced him to kill Paro (who commanded by the king, as he would kill Perry, and that by force can gaine a number would come to finish the execution which failed not in the tyme, the Indian rise out of his bed, and revealed it to Paro. Wher hearing this sume before day rowed vp to James Citty and gave notice there of to the gouernour, for which they rewarded there as at my plantacion by a timely intelligence the[se] Indians at new porte newes, and Captaine Ward at Kiquotan had advertisem[en]te before they weare assaulted, Aboute 300 were slaine many poores w[i]t[h] Mnition taken away, and many ffurther distroyed. the craft and subtilty they vsed in this their bloody designe is more then strange in so barbarous a people, the cause of all is vnkno

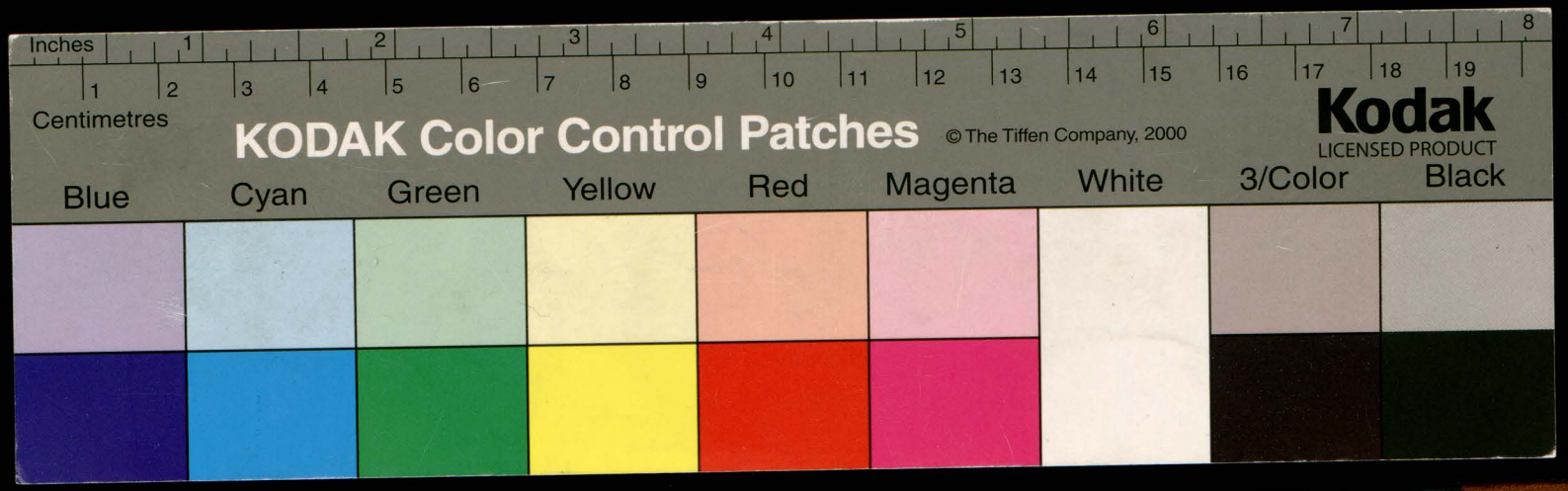
ronb and can be but consitured, ye planting so
neere the staths was from the beginning prohibited
and diffaged, the death of Nenematgiam rate
or quitted upon ingendred this purpose, for a king
of the eastward peer sente word the last summer
that Opatgantano had an intente to distroy us,
eyther by surprise or poyson, and had sente greate
presente to a king his neighbour (in whose dou
nty it grew) to furnish him with the latter
wch they absolutely refused, Opatgantano ther
fore with greate bigenouty denied it, the
other promised to stande out 5 or 6 of his great
men to justifie as much but failed in effor-
mance at the assembling of his people about
the taking upp of portans boards, soe wch was
likely to be attempted, if our nation had not
then upon that occasion stud on
there ground. But now no admonition could awake
our opinions straight, it was in my passage to the
from workes at that very time and not farre
from the place, when Nenematgian was slaine
and with aboute 20 mann the fort, finding war
ning to all wch sober I tooke to stande on
there guard, the like did the gouernour by his
letters as soone as it came to his knowledge,
but they slighted them to much, and distrusted
them to little, destroied by that generall secu-
rity the Indians continued all that attempts
and pursuite of the doubled continuance of

of our amity; That Guatemozin demanded satisfaction
for the slaine the man that slew him being then a
prisoner and with all that this must be no breach
to our peace, informing the gouernour that he
had sente word through all his dominions that no
man should stirre, when those messengers as it
should seeme prepared them to his ouerthrow, & there
with many if our intreating them daily vpon
them possest not the ~~him~~ note that euen
they who should dispossesse them of his country
as they had been formerly of the rest findes by
the Spaniard that feare producing his effect
emboldned by the facilitie of the enterprise,
for no nation euer laid so rebate a foundation
as who not preaued in a cause so impossible
to routinto a handfull of men disseuering them
selues sometymes ~~in~~ at lengths one ~~ex~~ ~~ex~~ ~~ex~~ ~~ex~~
a mighty ridde to be fortified with nor lesse if it
were fortified ~~with~~ at all then the purse of a
kingdome the houses standing like so many
hermitages inuironed with woods and swamps
farre remoued from neighbours, your guardes
taking 5 miniles a long the shore and some
all most doubling that proportion not inhabited
by a hundred people, diuers met with twenty
and beyond many on particular diuidents in-
creasing a thousand acres togather, who had not
found men in their families, as careless as if
in the heart of a populous shyre out of the eye
of the magistrate requested from the exercise
of religion and armes, and liuing like
libertines, neyther doubt a losse blow gaue
reformed their errors who, & vanish their

the inhabitants rather gave rebellion then forsake their howses goods and large tracts of ground
by their will nill to remove in so great an extremity the sparing Creatures the Colledge lands,
Henrico & Charles; and the Charles Citty with
all their entrenchments diuidents are abandoned
Hunter Iland the Fundens Gouse flowerdew
hay and Sutys hamptons Iland ods are all that
are left about James Citty opposite on the
other side: my plantation Captaine powells
and Mr Rolfs are well maned and strongly
enough for the Indians the remaind of mor
tiue hundreds and uariquiacke are transported to palsgrey Captaine Lownes keeps
his seate and Captaine Ward Colonel Gin
some thirty lye on the
Lord de
ler Captaine willcoks and is now the staple
of our Colony uutreadible is our taske and
toyle in reducing these unwilling people
into platts of safety and security the
greatest nomber of many runne wild and flye
from the sight of an Indian as if they knew
them for their butchers, a third parte of
men doe but guarde the rest and a tuesdit
is not with out some slaine) that now should
be thus distressed by so naked and cowardly
a people who dare not stande the presente
monte of a staffe nor an unbarged peece
in the handes of a woeman, they know
where to gaine vs vppon all aduantages

avantages but are gardly themselues to be
founde and wpon them, wee may cast well
and ouer to out runne so many yares. One
night & drew out a ptie in hope to surprise
the Cowagamas conducted by the Indian
boye can not endure to be so called, that re-
uolted theire boatswayne: were distonded of
from sledging by a fier awaked by the in-
dians before wee could lay gold wpon them,
so that wee were constrained to pull them
two wayes bring equally likely, it was our
misfaper to fall on the wrong and after 20
miles marg to returne with doing no fur
ther harme then the burning of theire
houses; they are to be distroyed but by sur
prize or ffamine the 1 is to fall, the latter
assured, but the time is not till harueft
gouge & the fruit of roudge can gardly
breake that delay wpon by inflicting it wpon
them wee must solitude our selues from
that waite so threatened vs, this vnexpected
blow hath inducted many to consider in how
weake a state wee are if a forraine foe
should inuade vs wpon a Famo full flight
must be our best refuge and euen that
would but conduct vs to ambuses of the
sauages were wpon some possitions have
been made to remoue the wpold Colony
to a plate of better fortifycation both against
a forreiner and the incursions of the

the Indians that she was procured vpon
the bar betweene Cape Charles and a point of
land northward some 4 miles broade bounded
on both sides with stones make sable for ships
of the straights betweene Smiths Iland
and the maine affording a safe harboure
to be vsed a great labour impregnably for
tifyed this was strengthened with many ca
sons


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

Not dead, not Borne, not Christned, not Begott
Lo heer shee lyes that was and yet was Nott
Was Dead, was Borne, Begott, Baptized, nay more
Was in hir Life not Honest not an Whore.
Search reader, and untye this Gordian Knott
Wch when thou hast untyd, thou untyest not.

A rezinous Sloane
w^th hill bound starch cloane
Late preachd before the King
A ring w^t espied
At his band string tyed
Was not that a prettie thing
To ring out of Doubt.
Was this but him out
~~Et cetera not well what was next~~
~~he could him cry stinking stock~~
For most that were there
Did think I dare
He handled it more then his text.

A Letter to the lord Keeper
for inlarging of Recusants.

Trusty and welbeloued we greet you well. whereas we
haue giuen a former warrant, and direction for the mak-
:ing of 2 seuerall writs. for the inlarging of such Re-
cusants, as are in prison at this time, either for matter
of recusancy according to the statute, by removing them
from the seuerall Gaoles of the Kingdome, to be bayled
before the Justices of our bench finding by experience
that this course will be very troublesome to the
poorer sort of Recusants, and very chargeable unto
us, who out of our Princely clemency, and by the
Mediation of forren Princes, we are resolued to
beare out the same, we will and require you
to make and issue forth two other writs, in nature
and substance answereable wth the former, to be
directed to our Justices in there seuerall circuit
inabling and requiring them, and euery of them, to
inlarge such recusants, as they shall finde in their
seuerall Gaoles vppon such sureties, and recognisances
and other conditions, as they were inlarged by the
Iudge of the bench, and this shall be your warrant
to doe it. Dated at Wmsore.
the 27 of July. 1622

293

The Ld Keeper to y^e Judges.

After my hearty Comendacõ his mty having resolved out of deep reasons of state and expectations of y^e like correspondency from forreigne Princes to y^e Professours of our owne Religion to grant soe much grace and connivency to y^e imprisoned Papists of y^e kingdome, comanded mee to pass 2 writts under y^e great seale of England for y^e same purpose, requiring y^e Judges of every circuit to enlarge y^e sayd persons according to y^e effect and tenor of y^e same. I am to give you to understand from his Maty how his Royall pleasure is upon y^e receipt of y^e sayd writts you shall make noe nycencs or difficulty to extend y^e his Princely favour to all such Papists as you shall finde imprisoned in y^e severall gaoles of y^or circuit for any church recusancy wt soever, or for refusing of y^e oath of Supremacy, or for refusing of y^e pish Bookes or for having or any other popish Recusancy wch doth concerne Religion only and noe matter of State wch shall appeare unto you to bee meerly and totally Political and Civill, and soe I bid you heartily farewell.

Westm. Aug. 2.
1622.

y^or assured Lo. Frend. J. L. C. S.

(Willm. Bp. of Lond. Treas. Cust. Sig.)

Right reverend father in God my very good Lord and brother I have receaved from y^e^ Kings most excellent M^ty^ a Letter y^e^ tenor wherof here ensueth.

Moste reverend Father in God right trusty and right entirely beloved Councellor Wee greet you well. For as much as y^e^ abuses and extravagancies of Preachers in y^e^ Pulpit have bin at all times repressed in y^e^ Realme by some Act of Counsell or state wth^e^ advise and resolution of grave and learned prelates, in soe much as y^e^ very licencing of Preachers had beginning by an order of Starre-chamber y^e^ eighth day of July 160 1ten. Octavi our noble predecessor and Whereas at y^s^ present divers yong Students by reading of late writers and ungrounded divines doe broach many times unprofittable, unsound, seditious, and dangerous doctrines to y^e^ scandall of y^e^ Church and disquietting of y^e^ state and present governm^t^, Wee upon humble representac^on^ unto us of y^r^ incovenienc^es^ by your selfe and sundry other grave and reverend Prelates of y^e^ church, as allsoe of our Princely care and Zeale for y^e^ extirpac^on^ of Schisme and dissens^on^ growing from theis seeds, and for y^e^ setling of a Religious & peaceable government both of Church and state doe by theis our speciall lets straightly charge and comand you to use all possible care and diligence y^t^ the limitac^ons^ and cautions herewth^ sent you concerning Preachers bee duely and strictly from henceforth observed and put in practice by y^e^ severall Bisshops in y^r^ severall diocesses wthin your Jurisdic^on^ And to y^e^ end our pleasure is y^t^ you send forth wth^ severall coppies of these direccons to bee by them speedily sent and communicated to every Parson, Vicar, curate, Lecturer and Minister in every Cathedrall or Parish Church wthin y^r^ severall Diocesse, and y^t^ you earnestly require them to imploy y^r^ uttermost endeavors in y^e^ performance of y^e^ soe importunate a busines, letting them know y^t^ wee have a speciall eye to y^r^ proceedings and expect a strict accompt both from you and every of the[m]. And these our lres shall bee your sufficient warrant and discharge in y^e^ behalfe given under our signett at our Castle at Windsor, y^e^ 4th day of August in y^e^ 22 yeare of our reigne of England, France, and Ireland, and of Scottland y^e^ 56th Anno Dni. 1624.

By this you see his M^ties^ Princely care, y^t^ men should not preach Christ crucified, obedience to y^e^ higher powers and honest Christian Conversation of life but in a regular forme and not for y^t^ every yonge man should take unto himselfe an ex-

an exorbitant liberty to teach wch hee lisleth to ye offence
of his Maty, and ye disturbance and disquiett of ye church
and comon wealth, wch I can give unto your Lpship not
better direccions for ye performance hereof then are pscri-
bed to you in his Mtyes ltres and ye schedule, herewth
sent you, wherof I pray you bee very carefull seeing it
is ye pricely pleasure of his highnes to require an accompt
both of you and mee for ye same and for not doubting
but by you regester or otherwise you will cause those in-
struments to bee comunicated to your Clearge I leave you
to ye Allmighty and remaine

your Lpships loving Brother
G. Cant.

Croyden. Aug: 12: 1622

Directions for ye Preacher.

That noe Preacher Vnder ye degree of a Bisshop or Deane of a Cathedrall, or Collegiate church, and they vpon ye Kings day and sett Festifalls doe take occasion by ye expounding of any
1. text of Scripture wtsoever to fall into any sett discourse or commune place otherwise then by opening ye coherence and division of his text, wch shall not bee comprehended and Warranted in essence, substance effect or Naturall inference, wthin some one of ye Articles of Religion sett forth 1562, or in some of ye homilies sett forth by authority of ye church of England not only for ye helpe of now preaching ministers, but wthall for a patterne and boundary as it weare, for ye Preaching Ministers, and for yr further instruction for ye performance yrof they forthwith read and peruse diligently ye said book of Articles and two Bookes of Homilies.

That noe Parson, Vicar, Curate or Lecturer shall ~~preach~~ preach any Sermon or Collation hereafter upon Sundayes or Holydayes in ye afternoone in any Cathedrall or Parish Church
2 throughout ye Kingdome, but vpon some part of ye Catechisme or some Text taken out of ye creed ye 10 Commandments or ye Lds supper prayer funerall Sermons only excepted) and ye Preachers bee moste incouraged and approved of whoe spend ye afternoones exercise in ye examining of yr children in ye Catechisme and in expounding ye severall points and heads of ye Catechisme wch is ye most ancient and laudable customs of ch. of Eng.

That noe Preacher wtsoever vnder ye degree of a B. or D. at ye
3. least doe hencefforth presume to Preach in any popular audience ye deep points of predestination, election, reprobacie, or of ye Vniversality, resistibility, or irresistibility of Gods grace, but leave these themes to bee handled by ye learned men and that moderatly and modestly by way of vse and application, rather then by any positive doctrine it being more fitt for ye Schooles and Vniversities yn for simple Auditors.

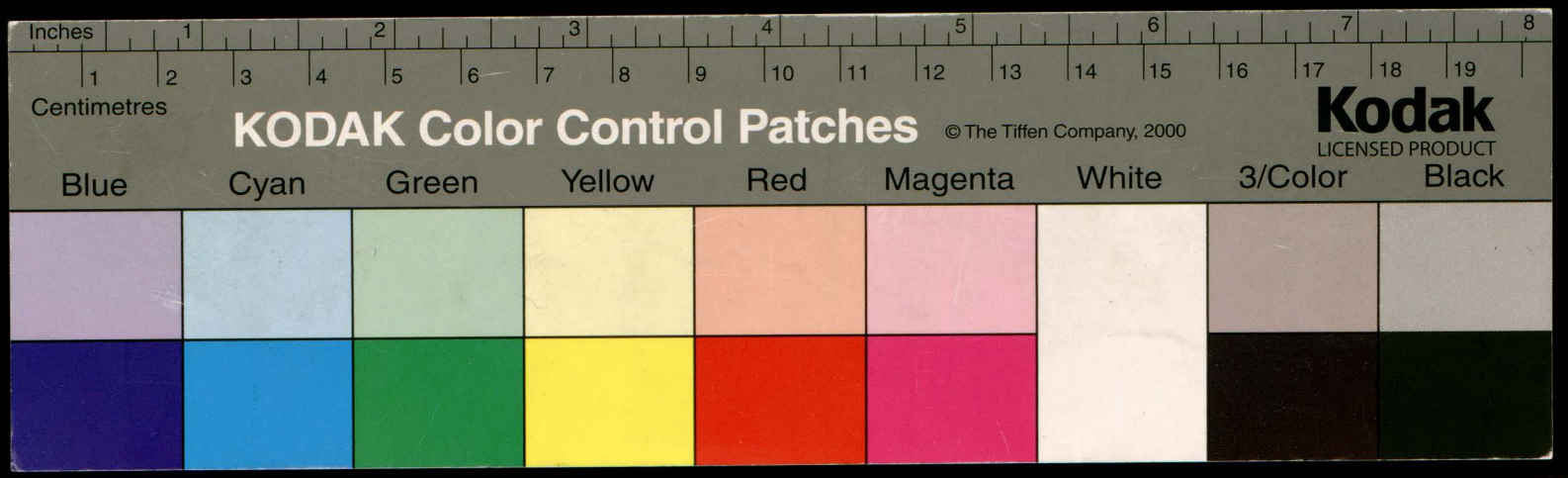
That noe Preacher of wt title or denomination soever shall
4. presume from hencefforth wthin any Auditory in ye Kingdome to declare, limit or bound by way of positive doctrine in any

lecture

lecture or Sermon ye power, progative, Jurisdico autority or duety of Soveraigne Princes or otherwise meddle wth these matters of State and ye references betweene Princes and people then as they are instructed and prefidenced in ye Homilie of obedience and ye rest of ye Homilies and Articles of Religio sett forth by publiq autority. But rather cofine themselves wholly to these 2 heads of faith and good life wch are all ye subiects of ye anchients Sermons and Homilies.

5. That noe Preacher &c. shall causlesly wout invitation of ye text fall into bitter invectives and indecent raylinge speeches againgt ye person either of Papists or Puritans but modestly and gravely when they are occasioned thereto by ye text of Scripture free both doctrine and ye discipline of ye church of England, from ye aspersions of either adversary especially where ye auditory is suspected to bee tainted wth ye one or ye other infection.

6. That ye Arch B. and Bisshops of ye kingdome whom his Maty hath great cause to blame for ye former remisnes bee more wary and choyse in licencing ye Preachers and revoke all grats made to any chancellour officiall or Comissary, ~~whereby they were whoyse~~ to passe licencies in ye kinde. And yt all ye lecturers throughout ye realme a new body Severed fro ye Anchient Clergy of Eng: being neither Vicears nor Curats bee licenced hence forth in ye Courts of faculties only upon ye recomendation of ye party from ye B. of ye dioces under his hand and seale wth a fiat from ye Li. Arch. B. of Cant. A cofirmacō under ye great seale of Engl. dispended by ye B. of ye sayd Dioces or in his default by ye Li. Arch B. of ye Provnce ab officio et beneficio, for a yeare and a day vntill his Maty by ye advise of ye next cōvocatiō shall prescribe some further punishment.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

Mty) verie good lorde I doubt not but before his time
to haue ytt from moo hys diuersions of his tortious
Mte tonttring preatsing and horeatsore, wch are
soo gratiouslie sett downe, that noe godlie or
discreet manne can otherwise hon ablnowledge yt
hys maty hath to ordifiation, if soo doe not take hys
wyll upon reporte, but doe punctually conferr
the worde, as hys doe lie) doe not giue ill construc
to that wch Mrotoue hath Interpretation not=
wthstaudinge some fonde Court now and manie
of the people haue tontriued, Jumpforlie ac wee goare
saie, yt hys influtions doe tend to hys restraint
of hys exercise of preatsing, and doe in some
sorte abate hys number of Sermons, and soe
consequentlie by degrees doe make a breach
to Ignoraunce & Superstition: his Mte in his
printlie wisdome (ate thought fitt that I should
aduertise ye Lordships of hys graue and weighty
Reasons wch mouethe hys Highnesse to prscribe
that wch is donne.

Yow are therefore to knowe yt his Mtie beinge troubled
and greeued at hys hart to heare euerie day of
soe manie defections from ye Religion bathe to Popery
and Anabaptiste or other poyte Sepation in some
prtes of his kingdome, and considering wth mutch
admiration what might bee hys cause thereof, especiallie
in hys raigne of suche a kinge wthe doth soe con=
stauntlie professe himselfe an open Aduersario to
the Superstition of the one, and the madnesse of
the other, his printlie wisdome could ffall upon

Noe other greate probabilitie seme ye liggthesse, affectinge
and unprofitablenes of that kinde of pretayning wt
(late) booke of late yeares tooe muche labour vppon
Court unsithed (Church and Countrey).

The usuall [lose] of verie manie pretended to noteb
to bee a [parte of] coming vpp in multitude tooe deepe for ye =
reparatie of ye people, or a mustering vpp of mute
reading, or displaying of ye owne will, or an ignorant
medling wt ye small matters abrode in ye private
or small psons and corporations as in ye Publique
of ye kingdome, or avoiding of ye owne disaste =
or a smoothing vpp of ye ydle fantasies wch in
his thesse time of soe longe a peace doe boile =
in ye heades of unadvised people.
Or lastlie rude or undiscreet raylinge not against =
ye doctrine wch now ye Lord shall ordaine ye
Saints to not onlie approved but muste rem[ou]ved by)
his royall Mtie but against ye persons of Papiste
and Puritanes; Now ye people broad upp wt his
kinde of teachinge and never instructed in ye Chris =
tian grid fundamentall or grounds of religion
as for all his ayded noise[m]ent nor better you
a brasse tabule newe Table booked readie to bee
fixed wher why ye Mannells and catechisme of
ye Popish pulpit or ye papers and Pamphlets
of Anabaptiste Browniste and Puritanes.

This Mtie horsemen raling to mind ye saying of Ter =
tullian Id rend quod primum. and remembringe
why wt at dottrie ye Churches of England in ye first
and most happie Reformation did drive out ye out and
loose out Hooker for possinge and fmbeddinge =
ye people of his kingdome doe find that ye
whole [corpe] of his dottrine in Containyed in
ye Articles of Religion.

And soe bookes as homlies the lesser and the grete
ratifyme wth his Mtie doth therfore retorne and agayn
in those directions and the standard and proper subiects
of all sound and edifying preachyng.

And see farr are these directions from abating that
his Mtie doth expect all o[ur] cause, that it should increase
the number of sermons by reasoning diuine sunday
in the afternoone in all the churches throughout the
kingdome, priuatime and most profitable exercise of
the ratifyme wherby the people yea boyes
children maie bee timelie seasoned and instructed in
all the heads of christian religion: the wch kind
of teaching to our iudgment bee it spoken in more
religious obserued in the reformed churches of
Europe then of late it hath bene feare in England
I find his Mtie mutch moued wth this noyse and
resolued if god that art his Bishops do not
see a reformation feare wch I trust good shall
to redresse it to ye feare of the euill Magistrat
for farr is his displeasure from giuing the least
discouragmt to sound preachyng or vigilant religious
preachers.

To all these I am to add that it is his Mte principle
pleasure that both the former directions and these
reasons of the same be fairlie written in euerie
respective office and that euerie preacher or
other at his admission sooner maie if hee bee pleased
take out rapiers of other of them wth his
owne hand gratis paying nothing in the name of
a fee or exposition but if hee do vse the paynes
of the Register or his Clarke hee to pay some
moderate fee to bee pronounced in open Court by
the Archbishop Commissarios of the plate & taking
the directions and approbation of my Lo: ye Bishop
Lastlie that from hence forward a course may be taken yt
euerie parson vicar Curate or Lecturer doe make
his residence of his Mtie directions and the reasons for
the same

At ye ensuing visitations of ye Bps of Lond and Roch
I dare not presume to give you any light of ye matter but
I conclude at ye time of exhibitions and not citing
but not all in ye Mr named requiring yo to stop
and a special and extraordinary care of ye
premisses I leave yo to ye Almightie

From Croydon
3 Sept 1622

Yo loving Brother
Geo: Cant.

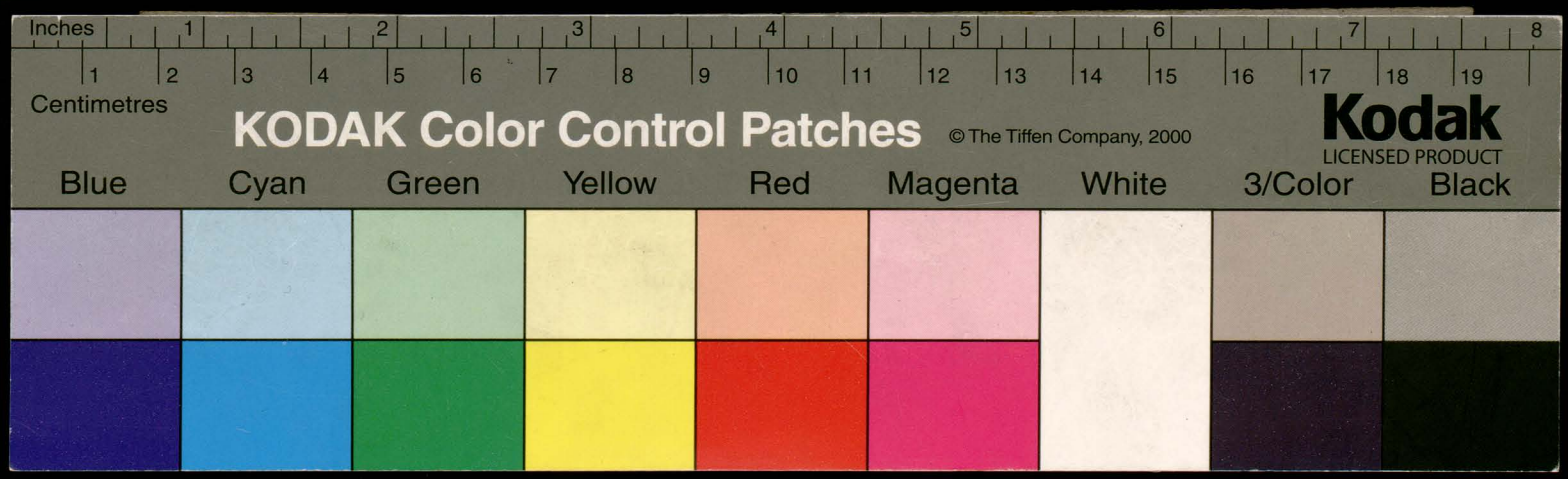
Kodak Color Control Patches © The Tiffen Company, 2000 LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue Cyan Green Yellow Red Magenta White 3/Color Black
Centimetres Inches

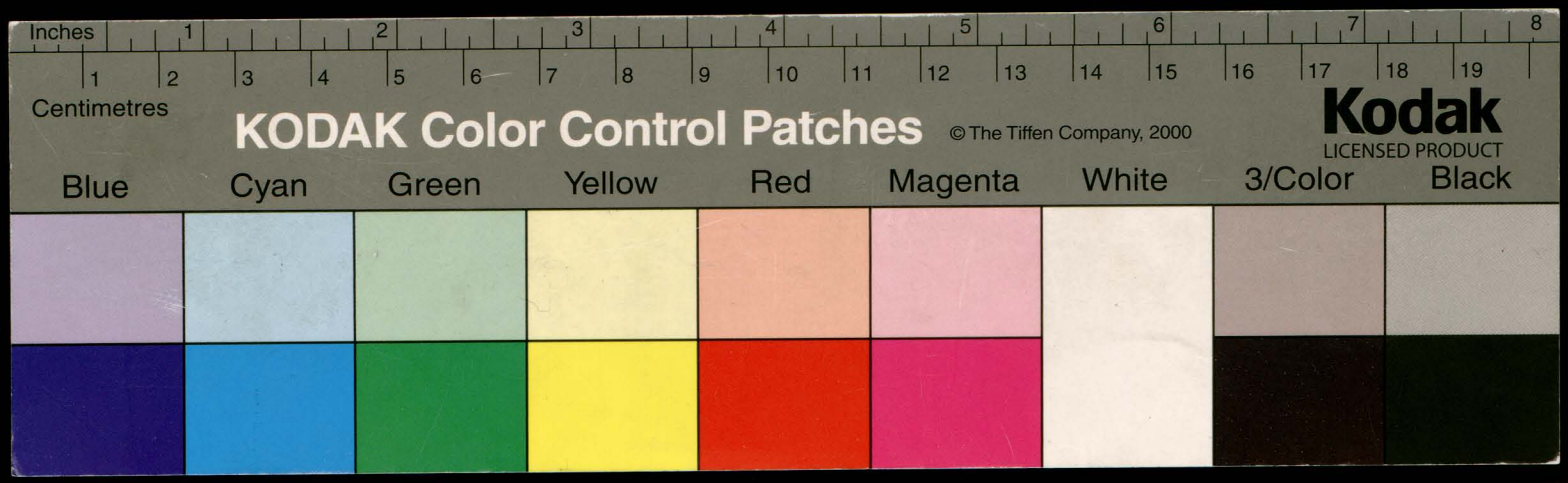
A Lre sent to our L. Bp. of
Norwich, touching publiq Lectures.

Right trusty, and welbeloued wee greet you well. wee cannot conceiue but that you the watchman of our Church eyther slumber or sleepe, while the Enimy of our peace is so bold to sowe the tares of dissention betweixt Lecturers without cure of Soules and preachers that haue cure. wch dissention (wee are informed) is growne so great, that the people forsake theyr Parysh Churches, and theyr learned paynefull preachers in the same, and flock after theyr Lectures, reputing and styling the one sort holy, the other vnholy men, to the great offence of Almighty god, and scandall of our learned Clergy. for remedy whereof and to take away that note of separation, wee haue taken it into our princely consideration to set our vniforme order therein. Firste wee straitly charge you the Bp of the Diocesse not to admitt any Lecturer, or publiq preacher to any towne or corporation chosen into that place by voyce, or assignation of the people, or of the Gouernours of the same. Next where any towne or Corporation out of theyr deuotion doe set vp and maintayne a Lecturer in the weeke-dayes, or a sermon on the Sunday to be preached by a Lecturer, you doe order, and establishe the Lecturer as followeth: namely that you set aside the sor Lecturer and nominate in his place 5 or 6 or more graue learned men, conformable preachers, hauing benefices wth cure of soules, (of whose graue iudgment, peaceable disposition, and settled conformity you haue had longe experience, and will render vnto vs a iust account of the same) to preach the lectures by turnes, and course. and that you likewise nominate a graue conformable, peaceable minister hauing cure of soules wthin theyr townes to preach theyr Sunday sermon, and that you the same salary, or stipend diuided amongst them sore theyr paynes wch the towne did formerly contribute to the Lecturer of theyr owne election. wch if they refuse to doe wee shall apparently discerne such theyr remembrance of a Lecturer not

to proceed from pietie, and devotion, but to spring from pride, singularitie, and faction, since Gods word is the same preached by a Lecturer, or a benefficed Minister. And concerning the Towne of Ipswich, wee straitly command you to see this order daily and faithfully there performed. And because wee discerne M.r Ward the former Lecturer of that towne, to be a man indued with many good parts of learning, and understanding, wee are purposed to carry him in our speciall remembrance, and will likewise require you to doe the same: always provided, that he conforme himselfe to peace, order and moderation, and so wee bid you hartily farewell. Dated at whitehall 20 of July. 1622.

A Licence to the Bayliffe, and Burgesses of Ipswich to bestow the sume of that was payed to Mr Ward, to three ministers, that shall be nominated by the Bp being 73li 06s 8d. and that Mr Ward and that Mr Jurcaye his Lecture and Sunday sermons ~.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

Right honorable

I Owe more service to that true love & former acquaintance, which your Ho: hath been pleased to afford me, now these full ten yeeres, then to bee sparinge or reserved in satisfieing your Ho. about any doubt wtsoeuer, the resolution whereof, shall lie in my power. Concerning that offence, taken by many people, both this side the borders, & in Scotland, from that clemencie, which his Maiestie was pleased to extend, to the imprisoned Recusants of this kingdome; & my letter written vnto ye Justices, for ye righting of ye same (which your Ho. did intimate vnto me yesterday at Mr. Henery Gibbs his house, out of some newes vttered from a peere of Scotland) this is the plainest returne I can make vnto your Ho. In the generall, as the Sunne in the firmament appeareth vnto vs no bigger then a platter, and the starres, but as so many nailes in the pommel of a saddle, because of that gloinement and disproportion betweene our eyes & the object: so is there such an vnmeasurable distance betwixt the deepe resolution of a prince, and the shallow apprehension of common and ordinary people, that is they will bee ever iudging and censuringe, so must they bee obnoxius to error and mistakinge. Particularly, for as much as concerneth my selfe, I must leave my former life

life, my profession, my continuall prodigalitye, my writinge (whiche is extant in the hands of many) my private endeavours about some great persons, and the whole bent of my actions (which in the place I live in, cannot bee concealed) to testifie unto the world, what favour I am likely to importune for the papists in point of religion. for the king my master, I will tell you a storie out of Suetonius Tranquillus. A surveyor bragging to M. Livius Drusus, that hee would so contrive his house, ut libera a conspectu, immunis ab omnibus arbitris esset, that it should stand removed out of sight, and bee past all danger of peeping or ear-dropping, was answered again by Drusus, Tu vero, si quid in te artis est, ita compone domum meam, ut quicquid agam ab omnibus conspiciar possit. Nay my good friend, if you have any devices in your trade, contrive my house after such a manner, that all the world may see what I doe within. So if I should endeavour to flourish up some artificiall Vault, to hide and conceale the intentions of his Majestie, when the resolution of this his Royall Majesty, I know I should receive the same thanks that the surveyour did from M. Drusus. I was not called to counsell, by his Royall Majestie, upon the resolution of this clemency to the lay-Recusants was first concluded: but if I had been asked my opinion I should have advised it, without the least hesitation. His Majesty was so happily addicted at this time, that (to incredible encouragements of his

his Treasury. He was a most zealous interceder
for some ease and refreshment to all the prot-
estants in Europe, (his owne Dominions and Den-
mark only excepted.) Those of Switzerland (Gabinge
lately provoked her pole) Each no other Love of peace,
those of France, of the Exercise of there religion, those of
the Palatinate and adioyning countries of the Lowe Coun-
try to pray ends, there by the earnest medita-
tion of our gracious Master. And advised by the late
Assembly of Parliament to insist awhile longer in this
milder way of intercession and intreaty, what a preposterous
argument would this Lawe seeme to desire these mighty princes
(Carnall and victorious) to grannt some liberty and timing
to the protestantes, because himselfe dith now in prison
and execute the rigour of his lawes against the Roman
Catholikes. I must deale plainly with your Lo.
our pernicious countreymen the English Jesuits in France,
to frustrate these pious indeavours of his Maiestie,
Lath many monthes before this favour granted,
retorted that argument upon us, by writinge a most
malicious booke (which I have seene, and read over)
to the French king: inviting him and the three estates,
to put all those statutes in execution against the
Protestantes in those points, which are Grave matters
and (as they falsly informed) severely executed
upon the papistes. I would therefore see the most subtill
state-

Monger in ther words walk out a way for
his Mairstie to mediat for grace and favour,
for ther protestants, by executinge (at this time)
ther severitie of his lawes upon ther papists. And
that this favour should mount to a Toleration, is
a most dull (and yet amost dim light) misconstruction.
A toleration looks forwards to ther time to come,
this favour backwards to ther offences past. If any
papist now setted at libertie, shall offende ther
lawes againe, ther justices may (may must) recommit
him, and have favour and merit to ther hinge,
to regone only ther property forfeited. Nay let those
to whom directed to ther judges bee as diligently pressed
by theise rash censurers, as they were by those grave
and learned men, to regone his Mairstie retrieved
ther penning of ther name: and they shall finde,
that these papistes are not otherwise out of prison
then with ther harkis about ther eares; sufficient
sureties and good recognizances to present
themselves againe at ther next Assises. As therefore
that Lacedaemonian opposed ther oracle of Apollo by
asking his opinion of ther bowle wherin ther greatest in
his hands, whether ther was alive or dead. So it is
a matter yet controverted and sondered, whether
these papists (whose & wherof in ther hands of ther
laws) be still in prison, or at libertie. Theire owne
demeanour, & ther success of his Mairsties negotiations, are
ther

Charles that must decide ye same; Ffor ye Fair-
ffaxists doe wage insolent warr with his army, insulting
upon ye protestants, and translating his favour
from ye person to ye cause; I am verily of
opinion that his Majestie will remand them to
theire former state and condition, and render his word
no more. But if they shall use these graces
modestly by admitting conference with learned strangers
demeaning of themselves, waighbourly and prayerably
praying for his Majestie, & ye prosperous success of
his pious endeavours, & rewarding him bountifullie (wch
they are as well able to doe as any other of his subiects)
if God shall ever frame & constraine to take his sword
in hand. Yea it cannot be denied, but our Master is a
Prince, that hath (as one sayth) plus humanitatis prae
quam hominis, & will at that time leave to be mercifull,
when ye cause to be himselfe. In ye mean while this
~~argument~~ argument fetcht from ye divine To pirkes,
wch concludes a concreto ad abstractum, from a favour
done to ye English papistes, that ye King favoureth
ye popish Religion, is such a composition of Folly &
malice, as is little observed by that gratious Prince,
wch by word, writing, exercise of Religion, Acts of
Parliament, late directions for Catechising &
preachinge, & all professions & endevours in ye worlds
hath demonstrated & himselfe so resolved a
ffe protestant.

God by his holy Spirit open the eyes of the people,
that these airy representations of vnderen ygeantasies,
set a side, they may cleerely discearne & see, how by the
goodnesse of god, & the soundnesse of their kingdome, this I
stand (of all the Countries in Europe) is the sole nest of
pure & true Religion. And the inhabitants therof,
vnhappie only in this one thinge, that they neuer looke
vpto Heauen to giue god thanks for so great a happinesse.

Lastly for mine owne letter to the Iudges (which did no
only declare, not operate the fauour) it was either
misconceiued or more misconstrued. It writes towne kindred
of Penshanries only payable of his Maisties clemencie, not so
much to include these, as to exclude many others names,
bearing amongst the papists the name of Penshanries,
as hauing the function of a Romish priest, seducing
the Kings liedge people from the religion established,
scandalizing & as giuing ouer Kinge, Church, state, or
present gouernment. All which offences (beinge outwards
practises & not secret motions of the conscience) are
adiudged by the Lawes of England, to be meerly Ciuill
& politicall, & therefore by my letter from the benefit of
those writs, which the beareer was imployed to deliuer
vnto my lordes the Iudges. & thus I haue giuen your Lo
a plaine accompt of the carriage of this business,
and that the more speedily & your Lp might
perceiue it is no aurea fabula or prepared fable
but a bare narration wch I haue sent vnto
your Lp. I beseech your Lp to let his Mty

my honr, y^t the true to the Justices of peace concerning those of Leaders recommended by his m^ty, shall be sent away as soo^n as they can bee ascribed. I will trouble your L^p no more at this time, but shall ryst ever

Your L^p: servant
& true friend.

from Keyston colledge
this 17 of sep^br 1622.

Kodak Color Control Patches © The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue Cyan Green Yellow Red Magenta White 3/Color Black
Inches Centimetres

A letter from y^e L^d Keeper to y^e B. of Lanox & Justices of y^e peace in Kent

After my very hearty comendacon vnto you. Considering y^t Almighty God w^th he had but 2 in all y^e world to serve him, planted the a Garden to keep them from idlenes, & having afterwards appropriated vnto himselfe a whole Comonwealth, did enact y^e law in y^e 15^th of Deut. Mendicus non erit inter vos against begging and lazines and y^t y^e comon & statute lawes of y^e Kingdome, being either of them exceptions out of y^e law of God y^e one by creation of Tenures & services, y^e other by soe many peremptory edicts doe vtterly condemne & extirpate Beggers Rogues Vagabonds Egyptians and such lazy and vnprofitable members of y^e comon wealth, his M^a^ty is iustly at you who being entrusted w^th^ y^e care & execution of these statutes, doe suffer your Country notw^th^standing to swarme w^th^ whole troups of Rogues beggers, Egyptians & idle persons to y^e exceeding great damage of many hy M^a^ties poore subiects, & y^e dep aspercon of y^e present government. These are therfore strictly to require you & every one of you forthw^th upon y^e receipt therof, to put these lawes for y^e punishing, imploying & chastizing & rooting out of these idle people (sympt)omes, popery & blinde superstic^on^) in diligent practize & execution taking noe longer time of deliberac^on^, y^n^ y^t your next ensuing quarter & sessions. / Also whereas these last yeares have yealded abundance of grasse & hay & Corne & Cattle have bin very cheap in markettes; yet hath y^e hay and Oates in Innes & Hoastleries the flesh in y^e shambles of townes and cities and y^e bread w^th^ y^e Bakers every where borne such excessive & intolerable prices, y people could take noe knowledge of y^e blessing of god nor lift vp y^r handes to praise him for y^e same; this his pleasure is y^t according to y^e statutes provided in y^e behalfe and according to your oathes and duties you doe forthw^th^ reforme these severall exorbitances, by apportioning such reasonable rates on all these particulars, as in equity and cosc^ience^ shall be found fitting especially in those townes & villages w^th^in your County, where hy M^a^ties servants & Retinew are inforced by y^r attendance vpon y^e Court to lodge & sojurne. /

And because an account is expected of y^e^ your service you shall enioyne your Constables to present every quarter Sessions all those severall troupings of Rogues & vagabons and all excessive prices of hay & Oates in Hoastleries of flesh & bread in Townes and villages together w^th^ y^e names of y^e next adioyning iustices by whose carelesnes & connivency these abuses are suffered

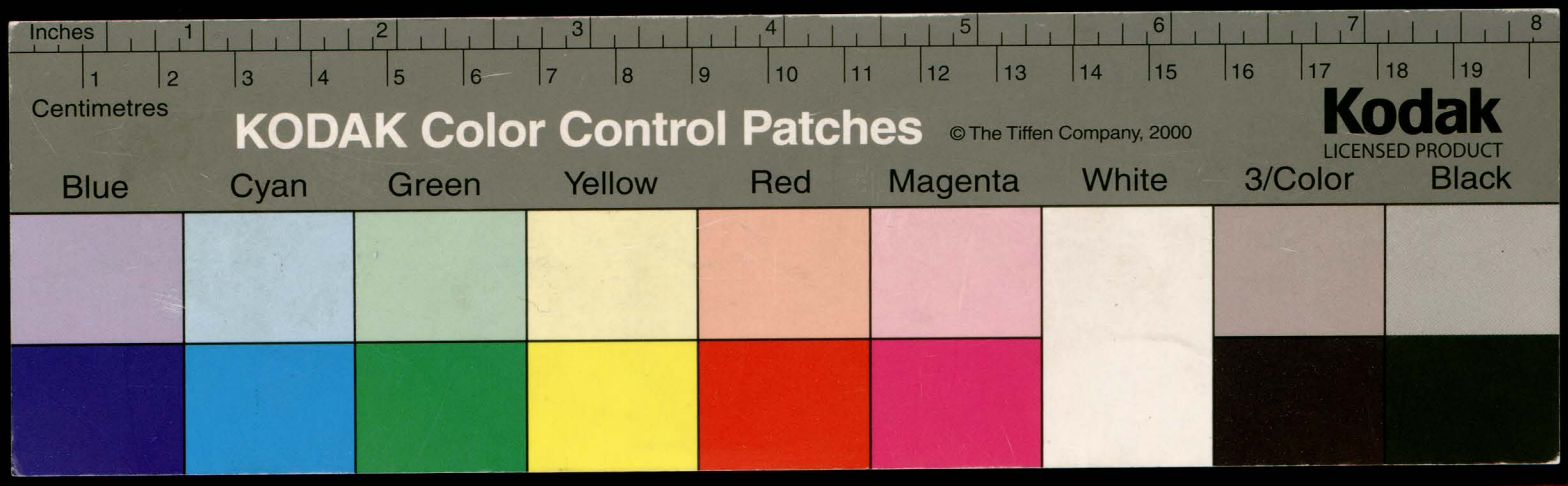
ferred, if being returned unto me by ye Custos Rotulorum or his deputy I may leave them out of ye Comission and supply those parts wth more serviceable gentlemen.

And not doubting your care & diligence herin as a matter soe earnestly recomended by his Maty I leave you for y time in Gods protection & doe rest,

your very loving friend

Jo: Lincolne. C S.

Westminster Coll. this xxith of Septem. 1622.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

What suddaine Change hath darkt of late
the glorie of th' Arcadian state
the fleecy flocks refuge to finde
the Lambes to play, the Ewes to breede
The Altars smoke, the offrings burne
That Jack and Thom may safe returne
The spring neglects her course to keepe
The Aire continuall stormes doth weepe
The pretty birds disdaine to singe
The Meds to smile, the wods to springe
The mountaines droope, the fountaines mourne
Till Jack and Thom do safe returne
What may they bee that moue this woe
whose want afflicts Arcadia soe,
The hope of Greece, the propp of Arts
Was Princely Jack the ioy of harts
And Thom was to our Royall Pan
The trewest swaine the cheefest man.
The lofty topps of Menalus
Did shake with winde from Hisperus
whose sweete delicious aire did blowe
From all the bounds of Arcady
which moues a vaine in Jacke Thom
To see the coast this winde came from
This winde was loue which princes stout
To pages turnes, but whoe can doubt
where equall fortune loue procures
And equall loue success assures
But ventrous Jack shall bringe to Greece
The brauing prize, the golden fleece
Loue is a worke of many Spaines
where coldest hills and hottest plaines

with barron rocks and freshe fields
By turnes dispaire and comfort yields
But who can doubt of prosperous lucke
Whom loue and fortune doth conduct
Thy Grandsire great thy father to
Weare thine examples thus to doe
Whose braue attempts in hoate of loue
Both France and Denmarke did approue
Sor Jack and Thom doe nothing newe
When loue and fortune them pursue
Kind shepards that haue loued them longe
Be not too rash in conjurings wronge
Dorrect your fears, leaue of to mourne
The heauens will fauour thezre returne
Domitte the care to Royall Pan
Of Jack his gome and Thom his man.

Arme arme in heaven there is a faction
And the Demy-Gods
Now are bent for action
They are at odds
with him y^t rules the thunder
They will destroy
his white tail'd boye
or rend the heavens asunder.

Great Ioue y^t swaies th'imp[er]iall sceptre
with his vpstart loue
that makes him drunk with Nectar
they will remoue.
Harke how the Cyclops labor
see Vulcan sweates
that giues the heates
& temps Mars his armour.

Marke how the glorious starry border
that the heaue hath worne
Till of late in order
see how they turne:
Each planets course doth alter,
the Sunne & moone
are out of tune
the Sphæres begin to falter.

See how each petty starre stands gazing
& would faine prouoke
by their often blasing
flame to this smoake:

the doggestarre burnes with ire
& Charles his waine
would wondrous faine
bring forth to this fire. #

Iove's Iuniter so disasterd
to what shee hath sworne
or to what respected
as shee in storme
to Ioue hath protested,
her servant Mars
shal scourge the Arse
Ioue's marrow so hath wasted.

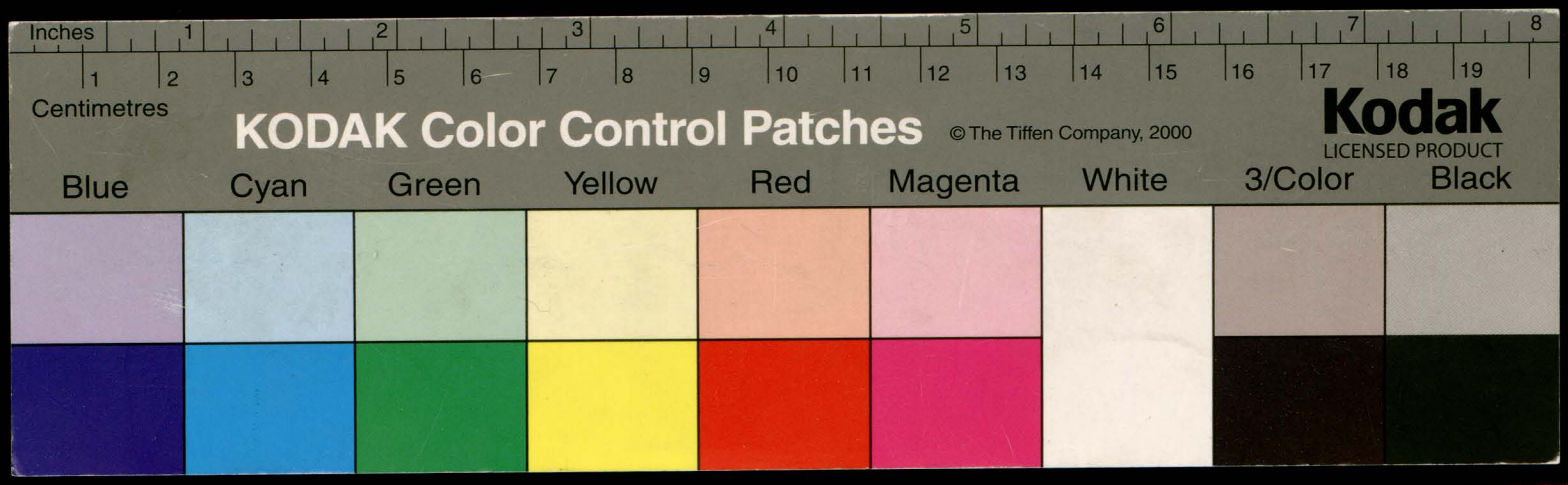
The chast Diana by her quiver
& ten thousand maides
hath sworne y^t they wil never
sporte in the shades
vntill the heavens creator
her quite displac'd
or else disgraced
her loving so gainst nature.

The faire Proserpina next hurries
in a fiery coach
drawne by 12 blacke furies
as they approache
they threaten without mercy
to have him burnd
yf so hath turnd
Ioues pleasure Arby verily

How ~~the~~ pac'd Saturne he doth follow,
Hermes will make one,
So will bright Apollo,
Thetis hath wonne
Rough Neptune to this action
Eolo Lusties
& Boreas puffes
to see the fates protraction.

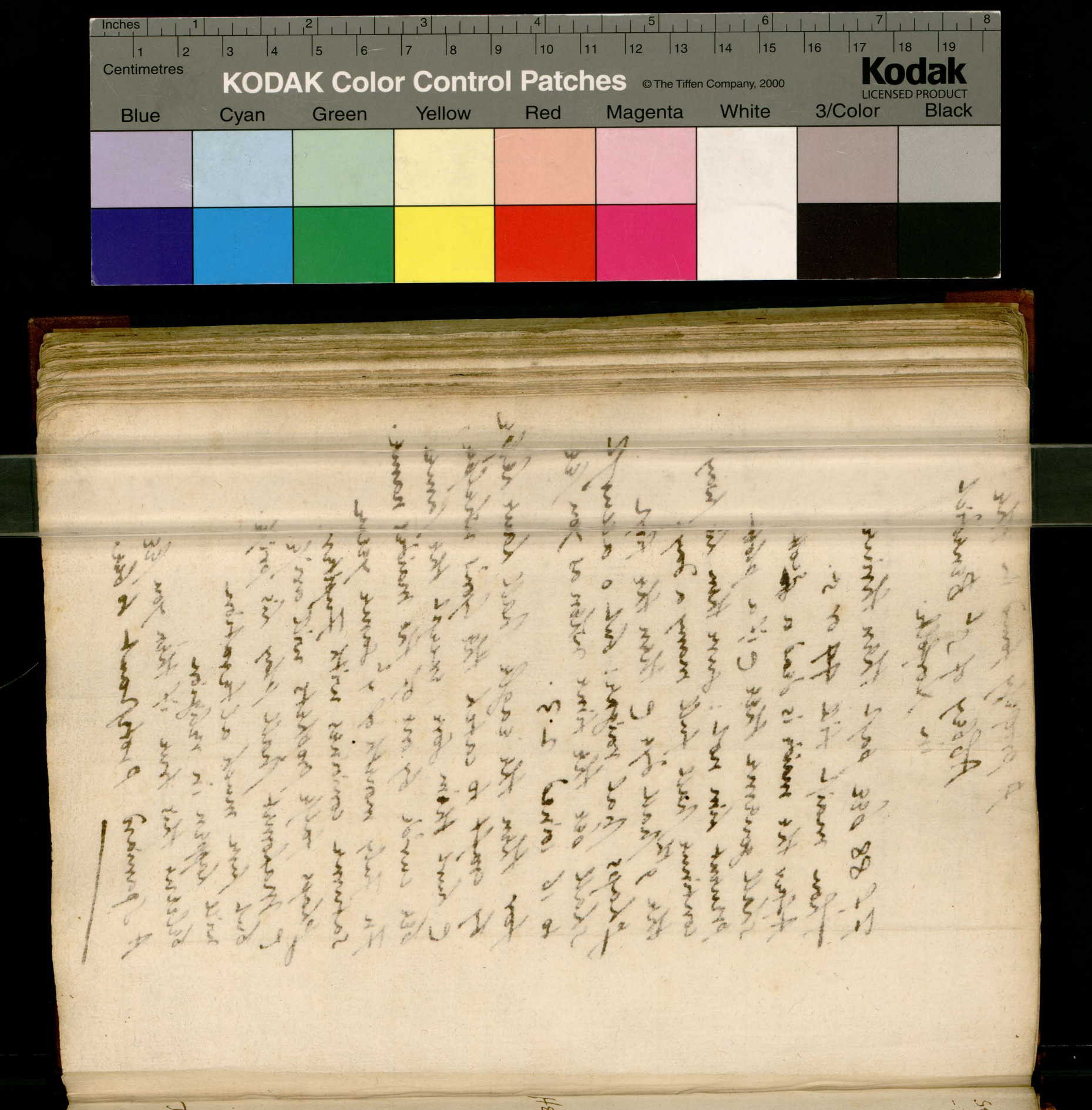
Still Jove with Ganymede lyes playing
Hears no Tritons sound,
Nor yet Horses neighing,
His Eares are bound
The fidling God doth lull him
Bacchus quaffes
& Momus laughes
To think how they can gull him.

How
marke great Natures course doth vary
And the tremings earth
eyther doth miscarry
or else hath birth
Is such as doth affright vs
old tyme doth gad
as he were mad
producinge thinges to spright vs.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

A prophesy found in the Abbey of S^t Benedict in Norfolk.

If 88 bee past then thrive
thou maist till 99 or 5.
After the maide is dead a Scott
shall governe thee & if a plott
prevent him not: sure then his sway
continue shall full many a day.
the 9^th shall dye & then the first
perhaps shal raigne: but o accurst
shall bee the time when as you see
to 16 ioined 23.
for then the eagle shall have helpe
by craft to catch the Lyon's whelpes,
& hurt them sore, except the same
bee curbd by one of the maides name.
In July month of y^t same yeere
saturne conioines with Jupiter.
perhaps false prophets will arise
& Mahomet shall play his prise.
but sure much alteration
will happen in religion
believe this true if then you see
A Spaniard protestant to bee.



the Senses.

Seeing

From such a face whose Excellence
May Captivate my Sovereigne's eyes
And make him Phœbus-like his throne
Resigne to some yong Phaeton:
Whose stately Eagle and vnstraide hand
May prove the ruine of o^r Land
Vnlesse great Ioue downe from the Skie
Beholding earths calamitie
Strike with his hand that cannot erre
That proud vsurping Charioter
And cure, though Phœbus grieue, our woe
From such a face that can doe soe
Whersoere it haue a being
Blesse my Sovereigne and his Seeing.

Hearing

From jests profane and flattering tongs
From bawdie tales from beastly songs
From after-supper suites that feare
A Parliament or Councells eare
From Spanish treachyes that may wound
Our Countries peace or Gospels sound
From Jobs false friends that would entice
My Sovereigne to heauens Paradice
From Prophets such as Ahabs were
That flattering would abuse his eare
His frowne more then the[ir] makes fearing
Blesse my Soueraigne and his hearing.

Tasting

From all fruit that is forbidden
Such for wch old true Isaac chidden
From bread of labours, sweat and toile
From the poore widdowes meale and oile

From blood of innocents oft wrangled
From their estates and for that strangled
From the candid poysond baites
Of Jesuits and their deceits
Italian Sallets Romish drugs
The milke of Babels proud whores dugs
From wine that can destroy the braine
And from the dangerous figs of Spaine
At all banquets and all feastings
Blesse my Soueraigne and his fastings.

From prick of conscience such a sting
As slayes the soule Heauen blesse my King
From such a bribe as may withdraw
His thoughts from equitie and law
From such a smooth and bloodlesse chimne
As may procure or tempt to sinne
From a hand, whose moist palme may
May Soueraign lead out of the way
From things polluted and vncleane
From all ghosts bestiall or obscene
From what may fett his soule a reeling
Blesse my Soueraine and his feeling

smelling

where Myrrhe and Frankincense is throwne
And altars built to Gods vnknowne
Oh let my Soueraigne neuer smell
Such damned perfumes as these be
Let no such fume his nostrils staine
From fancy that poyson can the braine
Heauen still preserue him next I crane
that we may be pleas'd great God to saue

My Soueraigne from a Ganymed
whose whorish breath hath power to lead
his excellence wch way it list
O let such lips be neuer kist
From a breath so farre excelling
Blesse my Soueraigne and his Darling.
And now just God I humbly pray
that thou will take that filme away
that keepes my Soueraignes eyes from vewing
the things that will be our vndoeing

then let him heare God God of the Sounds
As well of men as of his hounds
Giue him a taste and timely too
Of what his Subjects vndergoe
Giue him a feeling of their woes
And then no doubt his royall nose
will quickly smell those rogues forth
whose black deeds haue eclipsd his worth
they found and scourgd for their offences
Heauen blesse my King and all his Senses.

Hearing
tasting
feeling
smelling

Since Arthur or his table stoode
or yt blacke prince y^t was so good
England could ne're advance
A chronicle to fill with fame
of him who onely hath a name
alone in seeing France.
He neither rigg'd his father's fleete
nor mustred men his foes to meete
as Erle at Agincourt
the madcap prince of Wales once did,
oh no such tumults, God forbid
he onely went in sport.

Some say that Lord yt drove him out
And this ill followes out of doubt
An errand Knight look'd soe
Wh I conjecture soe by his sword
Two shields hee bore alonge nor more
Perhaps hoode bringe home three

If safe hee passe in this disguise
(As hee was cunninge whose adwise
Bor-ees provoke him to yt)
Hath not hee farre more honow wonne
Then hee yt marcht wth horrid Drumme
And came for to vndoe

But if ye French should chance to spye
(As they are Rockye Peeces to prye)
The Marquesse & ye Prince
Should not wee subjecte good dispayer
Of our obeying Englande heyer
Without ye French from thence.

Yett this for comfort still wee gather
Two Issues more his royall Father
Concealed hath kept in store
for whose sick Matters ev'ry day
The faythfull Pastors truly pray
And yet they still groane sore

329

Nor haue ye people cause to hate
The Kynge yt ventured thus his State
His care of them's well knowne
For Buckingha his spouse is gone
And left ye widowed Kynge alone
Wh Sacke & Sighs opp blowne
And though ye Councell pick theyr Teeth
And wh three night-cappes hide their greifs
Alas they were not blamed
For ow sage Soueraigne ow chose
Each Lorde & whome hee to disclose
His secrette was ashamed

To ye blessed Qu: Elizab: of famous Memorye
ye humble petic̃on of her now most wretchless
& most c̃temptible ye lowliest of England./

Yf Qu: in Heaven can eyther see or heare,
Or helpe poore Mortalls, oh then Lord thyne Eare
Loose (do not close yor sacred) & heare, oh heare vs nowe,
whose humble hearte lowe as ow Knees doe bowe:
Looke on o^r sufferinges, thinke vppō o^r wronges,
that hardly can we eyes from Mortall longes:
Oh see (wch now wee Gracious thē of olde
who each distressed vassall might see holde)
Into thyne eyes have to put this griefe,
And thine owne hearte lyvely a fayre relieffe.
See not wth eyes, wch gracious then before,
In Heaven ye supplicac̃ons of ye poore
are heard offens as soone as knees of good Kinges;
Yf ow petic̃ons (wch (I doubt) not wingles,
to mounte thē & ye Judge of Judges thrones
oh helpe then (Mighty Sovraigne) wth thine owne;
Carrye o^r just c̃plaints, since just they are,
And make a border of thē at ye barre
Wher not corrupc̃on, not fraude, nor feare, nor Bribe,
Nor gripinge Lawyer, nor abarious scribe,
Nor fabularike, nor Paraphe, nor shewe,
Ne eyther chaunge or Alter ye Opinō
Of yt great Chancellor: Then oh they downe
And Mortall Prayse in Heaven, on Earth Renowne./
Wher to begyne (Deserve of All Glorye)
Or how to tell o^r wonderfull Storye
Heaven Knowes, wee doe not Knowe; only wth i woes,
They once blest sōle have soe oft eyne curst
For offringe vppe Petic̃ons of this Kynd,
Woe soe wee wth trouble wth wee call to mynd
They wonted Goodnes; yt, oh yt doth discover vs
That onely giues vs hope, yt ow will heare vs:
Who Heaven wee pray (Knowe soule) to call this Mercy,
And see make wretched for some great offence
This Litle Land, oh then bequeathe ow speeches;
And see wee

And hee wee the ye Kingdome drowned wth teares,
And in those floode conuaid or foules to heaue
To waylo on thyne, wee kne not how bye driue
To cry, & call the fro thy followrs Laute,
To heare & pitty those our just complaute.
O pardon, Gloryst but ye or grosse Omission,
And daigne to further this or poore petition;
And wee will make ye Kame of blest Eliza,
Arquale ye Acts of ye greate Maria:
Nor Snuflinge Rascall throughe ye horne-pipe nose,
Shall tell thy Storye in his ribbed Prose,
Or shew thy Statue to each penny groome.
The Monumente woole build shall make prouder Rome
Or Pilgrimage to come, & all thy Shrine,
Offer their gyfte as at a Heathe Shrine;
And on an Altar framd of richest stones,
woole dayly bee sighes, & teares, & groanes:
Arbrinly shall stoope, & longe-longued fame
forgett to speake, ore wee forgett thy Kame
Rood (Glorst Coube) O rood it & Colume vs,
This giue it to his Habe yt cd robbe vs./

Thy faythfull Beadsmen &
Daylye Orators,
The poore distressed Comons
of Hopeless England./

To yᵉ Most High & mighty Jehovah
Chiefe Chancellᵒʳ of Heaven, & onely
Judge of All yᵉ Earth
The Most humble Petic̃on of yᵉ now
most miserable yᵉ Comons of longe
afflicted England

If blessings harte, dejected Doubt fynde Grace
Thou All-Disposer) turne not backe thy face
frō vs thy Suppliante: thrice fowr yeares have worne
their Tender fruite, fynce woe began to Mourne.
Aegypte ten Plagues woe have endured twise bie,
Fynce dyre Eliza was wth Elie buried:
thy Messengers of wrath thy vials powre
Each Day bppō oᵘʳ harte, nay ev'ry howre.
Plagues Cheefe Plagues, & fruitfull begetting growes,
As yf thee woes none End sett to oᵘʳ woes:
Hath oᵘʳ Blacke Fynne (great God) rays'd such a clowde
Twixt vs & Heaven? as Cryes thought cold not finde
Cō gett noe passage to thy Mercy-seate?
Are ow Iniquityes (God saie) soe greate?
Nor Infinite? as noythe groanes, nor teares
Cō entrance gett? Remember but yᵉ yeares
Of oᵘʳ Affliction; thie forgett (woe pray)
Ow Crying Synnes; burye thie ire yᵉ grave
Of darke Oblivō; thrust thie ire yᵉ Eyre
Of oᵘʳ Redeemer; oh bett thie Eye tyed
In clayes, yt they may not rise againe;
Bett vs noe longre sue & begge in vayne:
Bett thie oᵘʳ Supplicatiō, ow Complaynt
(towrd by oᵘʳ late Lowaigne now thy Ire)
At last fynde Grace: wast not (woe humbly pray)
Enough, yt tyrst yᵉ hookt yᵉ Dragon away?
Was not yᵉ Dove, yᵉ Lambe of Innocence,
Sufficient Sacrifyce for ow offence?
O let not ow Synnes outlive her; & ow Crymes
bid threate to outlast yᵉ last of Tymes:
Thou dyd'st remoove her, yt thee might not see,
The sad Beginninge of ow Miserye!
Thō fyte a Shower of hayle-stones, fell yᵉ Darte
of Angry Death

Of angry Death; how many thousde harte
were wounde in one yeare? how many blodd?
And wisht to Dye, wⁿ all they could, were dead?
Mothers lost childe, childe quite forgot
Of careful Parente; nay ther was not left
A payre of freinde to comfort one another:
who wanted not a Lifer? who a Brother!
whar was ye husband, whar ye wife could say;
wee shall not be divorced this night this day?
Death for his rage & awfull power showd,
That Man on Earth (as Corne on ground) lay strowd,
The fair Roundrow of it still remayned,
The stronkled Arme of vengeance bounde in chaynes
Old fruitfull fields, like Wyrde, waste, barber, plate, trees
did famish, fayne, dye, droope, wither, & freeze;
And nothinge issued frō ye barre Earth
But ye Beaue Monster, pale & thyn-fac'd Death.
Next subtile wormes rose, such as before
Eyre Noahs flood, were kept of Brittish shore
When Man & Beaste alyke in grand their bound,
vnder moyst waues, in stead of Marble stone.
How often hath ye Sunne wthdrawne his Light,
And lurkt on Day wth ye Shape of Night?
Had Aegypt thicker Darkenes this had wrought,
Wch clearest Eyes at Noonday could not spye?—
vnwholesome Mists, stronge Fogges, Rumours of warres,
civill prēdinges comette, blazinge-starres,
Prodigious birthes, vnnatvall Creatures,
Exployinge Philosophers beyond their Reaches,
Sightinges yt Lord, yt Rich exhortinges
from their Powre-bodde, when they say fearinges:
Heaue in Cōbustiō seemed, ~~ye Spheres~~ ~~did seem flame~~
the Skye in Armes,
The Starres Beate Drummes, ye Spheres did sound alarmes
The Ayre did oft Bloody colour spread,
And all to rouze vs frō ye sinfull bedd
Of Ease Generalye; yet nought could fright vs
till wee had worke of what did most delight vs.

Henry Ld Foy

Hōry ow joy, Hōry whose ōwy Lymbs
Threatned to cōsume Death, & not Death Him;
Hōry ow Pryer, ow Hōry yo Hōst,
In whom great Brittayne got hyr great rost.
Who had not in yt wod an ample share?
What Subject had not rather left his loird?
What lōre Mother did not wish yt Dart
Had glanc'd frō him, & struck her Darlings hart?
All yt word vorkous, all yt word lost good
Turnd their Eyes riūs into streames of blood!
This Egyptiā waiors bitter words but knows
This lowd yo very Sould yt dō not foe.
O Lydon Hōard! all plagues yt wod before,
Hau lost Thēselues in this, & word no more
To God vnnōbred; yt, oh yt alone
Might well haue made vs weops ow sorhes to stone:
The Tyrants of Pharoah, could their blod, bee prizd,
All yo first borne yt for word sacrificd,
All yt base fry; (compard to this ow Hōrye)
Deserued not Mēbō, nor Thought, not Memorye.
Repining Sodome (such hath thy Mercye byn
Although it did abound in crying Synne)
Could not take fyre, while they word vnnōcent,
Yt yt in Mercye lykd in Godes sight.
And thyne Auoyded blo vnjt hand this Cittye,
Before it was destroyed, such was thy pittye
Such thy Goodnes: oh is ther yet left hand!
Is ther (great God) a Nūber yt of Mē
Whose innocēcie may pluck thy Synnēd frō,
And keepe this Sodome (Brittayne) frō yo fyre
Of thy just Anger. Is ther yet a Lōuld,
Whose vertue power hath, but to controule
Thy hōard hyp-hūm of Justice? yf ther bee
For his or Hers sake tōrne thy Clowdeye
Awake thy Mercye, lest thy Slumber
And sound yo Gōsaber, for yt lesser Nūber:
For his or Hers sake, wod doo hūbly pray
Respite of Tyme; Giue vs a Longer Day;
And we (humbled by thy Grace & Favour)
Would purchase yōurs by ow good Behauiour.

Prayed, Sayed

Plague, famyne, darkenes, Inundacons
wee lived onward, feares of Inuasions
(wth expectacon of ye worst ca followe)
Daily tormēt vs, & wee hourly swallow
Our very Spittle wth feare & sorrow
wee nightly sleepe wth dread, & wake wth sorrow.
Nor are wee all this while free, vermyn free
The Caterpillers hange on owr tree,
Sowre Projectors, Monopoly-mongers:
A crew of vyllard Rascall, whose hangers
Ca nere be faliffyed, a sorte of Blaunt
More infaliable farre the whore, the Graund;
Thinges without sowle, bred onely of ye Elyme
Of this old-age, this Cave decrepit tyme:
A Crew of vyllart Parasite, yt lyke,
And doe more Mischiefe, then ye Aegyptian flyes;
Wee in ow Gardens, wee in ow howses swarme;
And drinke A Mamon another dare a farme
This wth a Writt: wee wast: this Suffinge whore,
That by ye full of Justice doth procure
A tenemēt or two, wth hanginge gott
By Violence, her drowned babe in a pott:
They owne Citizens, Corporacons,
Worke not, yet live by occupacons:
They have not Trades, & yet not Trade is free
From them, to gett a Fyne, a taxe, a fee.
Aegypt had Skippinge Grashoppers, yeild
That eate ye hoarbt & fruite of owr feild:
And wee have Skipp-jacke Lawyers (I dare say)
That doe devoure more in one poore day,
Then they in Pharoahes Raigne could ere have done,
They Cowned were, prayd but for one to come,
But these (for their Appetites sport) have eate
The Fruites of all ye Land, all ye Estate!
Have wee not Froggs! oh yes in owr ditch
Devouringe ye poore, impoverishinge ye rich;
Busy Solicitinge Cars, base Juforms
Lyke toades & froggs lye croakinge in all corns;
Promotinge Rascalls

Pronoshings Rascalls, whose bonowes longes
Haue Edone thy Lupliade infinite wrongs:
Whos they dayre to Enter, thers not dofoes,
Now ancient tithe, nore Inheritace
Co keepe the out; they wrest & Swick ye Law,
Keepe Officers & Magistrates in awe,
Thos pleake ye Ballances fro fayre Justice fist,
Fid make her Ministers doe what they list;
The awfull Corbet of all Lowaigrye,
Is Mercenarye Barros vnto their villanye;
Ther is not Equity, not Law, nor right,
All cawsed their by fauor or by Might:
O god of Mercye! what more can bee saye?
Justice is bought & sold, Crowne & Crosse;
Honours conferred on base vnworthy Groomes
And clownes for coyne may pretend to highest roomes.
Job had many Troubles, yet none for Cause,
As wee those one & twenty yeares haue had:
Aegypt had Botches, Murraynes, sore & smarte,
But yet they lasted not, they soone departed;
Halfe fortye yeares & more are gone & past
Syne those ou vnkow soules took hap to hast.
Cowmen & Tollers, Kingmen & hi Mate,
(Compared to vs) are in a better state,
They ca bee heard, they ca bee rewarded
Whe wee are cuffd, Thrighted, vnregarded.
Is ther a people (Heauen) fald a Deprae
Belowe ye Condicon of a Dastard wee!
Wat ther a Nacio in the Vniuerse,
More Deinge euen, more Slouth, more feirce?
And is ther nowe beyond ye Earthes Broade face,
Any yt ca bee reckond halfe soe base?
Is ther a people soe much scorn'd & dispis'd
Cot Thought att, soe trodd on, soe vassalizd?
Wee ye all Europe subyed; woe, & woe
And Thunder to those wee kept in Thawes.
Whos is ou Ancient Nobility become
Alas they are supprost, & in their roome,
(Like prowd vsurping Lucifer) their sitte
A sort of vyllard fawninge Parasites.
Whos is ye Godly?

whos ꝑ ye gokry ſ all ſuppoſ disgrac'
And arcaut Knights about the now are plac'd:
fidlers & fooles, wth Dancers now & Rymes,
Are made in ENGLAND now ye greatest clymes.
wee had a late Parliament (a salue for soares)
A Magna Charta, all cast out of doores:
the bold & hardye Brittaynes cōquere'd are,
wthout a Drumme, a Sworde, or sound of warre:
Yf wthout cause (just Heaven) wee doe cōplayne
The ſoe is supplicatiō backe againe:
Were cold wee say, & much more could wee speake;
But wth ye thought of this, or harte doth breake.
As humbly then as wee dayanne, wee crave
A gracious Answere; or bee pleas'd to save
the Remant of thy people; turne thy face
And bott vs once more take thy Lawnye Grace./
forsake vs not for our Lords but yine
Now lyke to those, yt only wish to Liue

to prooue the ſolemn
wordy & faythfully
thy Cobate &
Boarſtrawe 7

A Gratious Answere fro ye Glorious
Elizabeth to her whilome Page,
with a Diuine Admonicion and a
Prophetick Conclusion./

You bold Petition (Mortalle) I haue found,
An Eyne it full of Passion full of Exclame.
Prayers (yt onlie Heaue & gayne a hearinge)
Are Wings wth Charity; hyed not approaninge
wth Supplications fraught wth Ire, wth Gall;
Ye doom confesse (poore Soule) ye truth of all,
And wish A period to ye Misereyes:
But Eyes yow Infinite Iniquityes
Must haue an End; alas yw must begynne
To loue fayre vertue, ai yw haue donne Eynne;
yw must redeme ye Eynne yte losse, & knowe,
Ye Heaue hath ow byn to vengeance flowe,
Eyes yt are fonde, by gazinge at ye Eynne
Incurage their Author, yf yw will Mercye gayne
For wrongfe Actions, yw must first refrayne:
How dare a wicked Corbant, owre requeste
Fro his just Ire, eyther grace or hyde?
You must put of ye Shoos, wth w^ch yw trodd
The way of Eynne, ere yw discourse wth God./
Guid Moe out grounde for Consideracion,
Incouragement & the ye Supplication
Shall dolive: I left yw rich his hand,
But prowde wthall; yow foard nowe, All foard yow:
yow were so farre from foard, yt yw deynd
To pray him foard yt gaue yw cause of prayse:
yw must be humbled, Heaue ouer yunish yte
All Eynne of Eynne and wth an opposite:
Hee ye will surfett ore hee gayne his health,
Must strictly fast: kno yow Sate stille i wealth,
yow now would haue bowd yow stubborne knee,
Eyther to God, or Saint, to Heaue, or Moe./
I will not grounde ye troubled soules so much
yt gothly ye Ingratitude I do touch;
And yt yow may ye better knowe ye Errours,
I shall vnto ye Memory call fauours,

By yw forgott

By yᵘ forgott; ruthefully forgotte
Longe tyme before ye flosh I wore, was rotte./
Yᵗ is not Occasion to rotate
Cowheyrs done to such as are Inyrate:
I found yᵘ like a poore & Scattered flocke
you wthy fowle Boatinge ayst ye Rocke
Of Ignorance & Superstition
Just in ye way to foule yᵉ dition:
I yᵉ Shipheard & ye Pilott too
yᵗ gott not Lambe nor fleece more tho my due./
I were exacted frō ye Comon Store,
Wee all alyke were rich, alyke were poore:
for Myne & Thyne, or thyne & Myne are things
Not to bee knowne twixt Cᵗᵉ & their Kinges:
princes lyke ye Cumm, should frō floode exhale
the arbattl they raise, & tho in showres bᵗᵗ fall
In ordy place (as they for cause) a Shard,
And not consume itt on ye wa[illegible]ton Ayre:
Their full Exchequrrs should (lyke Conduits) bee
Opē to All, to rich & poore lyke free:
And Cᵗᵉ should (lyke Scribe) bee full of Springes,
And Kandly fall still bowes their Kinges./
The comon-wealth should ow bee in Motion
Cbas flowe to Brookes, Brookes should fall to yᵉ Ocean:
Cuck Royall, such Loyall Comunitye
Koopes Kinges & Cᵗᵉ still in vnitye.
I cannott say I groune (this place is free
from Passion as frō Iniquitye)
But yᵗ I Must Sinne Scotland wth it ioyne,
Engleande, Exchequrr is not better Coyned;
Cuse there's false Play, I feare yᵉ younge Brother,
Is growne too wise, too craftye for ye other.
Yᵗ is an Ill-made Marriage, where ye Bryde
Cpdoe faster, tho yᵉ Husband ca guide./
I dw Mayntayne (Sacred be vaynglory Ryder)
A well rigged Navy still for ow Soyle
A Royall fleete, yᵗ lyke a brasen wall
Circled their Land; yᵉ Armyes were not small,
The Garrisons & forte

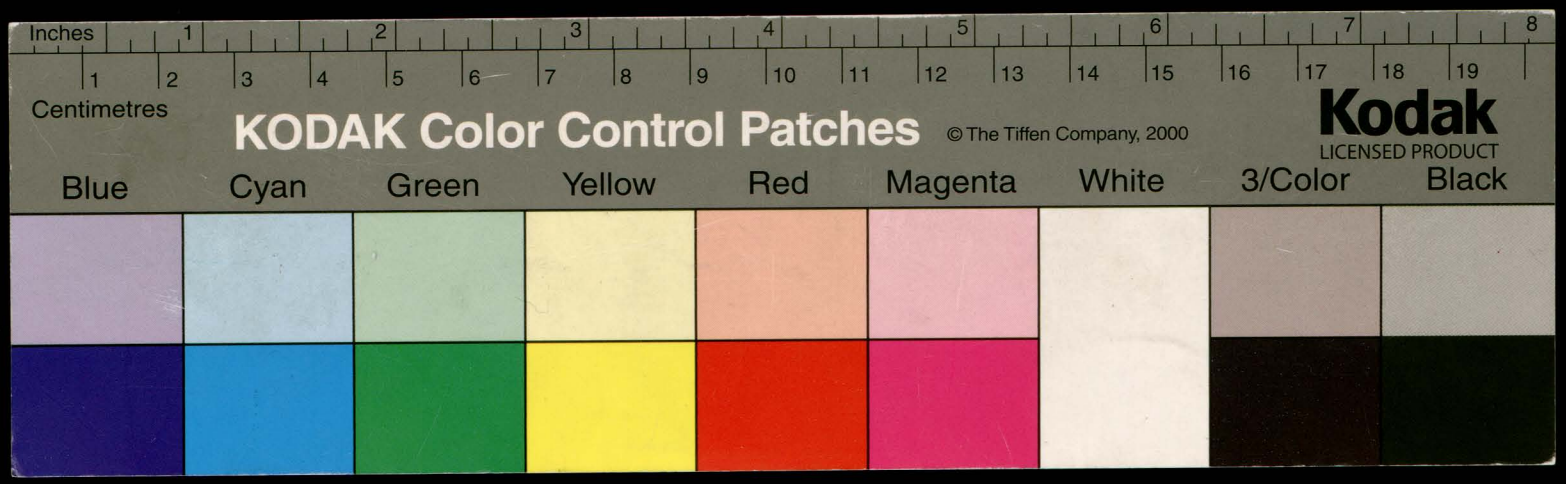
the Garrisons & Forte god beholde
Kept yn (lyke sheepe) in xbaw within yr folde:
what will deperinge Soldior, wot away
without Reward, muck lesse without his pay?
to Neighbow States, in Amity wth bt
Money & Mr. what forbat ow wot
without his hyre? what ponje was downe
frō my first houre, vnto ye houre I dyed!
In breife, I followed borrowed, oft did bow,
yett lost nought to giue, brought blessed Peace
How comes it tho, since wythe flood, not forth,
Armye nor Garrison, noe house, noe Courte,
Noe wages, nor Noble, nothinge repayd, nought paid,
Nought purchasd, nought bot, nought built, nought
And yet thers nought remayned, nought to bee Cleared.
All is not gold sure, all is not founde. / found;
I noe lesse muste, to see yr woode cutt downe,
the Ancient Lande Rowndowes of yr Crowne
Disposd of god, to fauorite or to Frend,
that should hereditarily descend
frō Kinge to Kinge as doth ye Diadem:
the Land of yr Crowne is yr Crownes chiefest gem
Lyfood, Subsidyes, fynes, and Accidente
And nought substantiall, but ye Annuall Rente. /
ther are Obseruers sure, ye service doe,
that must not bee made Knowne to Heaven or yw.
Princes are Gode on Earth, & Subjects Eyes,
vppō their Actions must not glaunce as Spyes:
Itt is a Dangerous & vngodly thinge,
to pryse into ye chamber of a Kinge;
the Arke of Gode is sanctifyed & must
Bee oudy touchd, by such ard ~~putt~~
But yw expect Answere to ye Petition,
The knowes (poore soule) I in grieu Mee in Contrition
frō Heauens greate Kinge to bidd yw, all ye passe
to whole to come, is but a Sparke a Glasse
you Sorrowes yett alas (lyke Wounds throe)
Doe god & come; but ther must followe woes,
ere England

(Ere England bee dolided) yt will make
the Entrails bleede, you very soules to quake./
the tyme will come, who shoulde not shall mourne
And children wish, they nere had borne borne:
the Swordes shall eate, what playnes hath ouflowd,
And fyre consumd, what famyne hath not mowd./
the Gosperls Sunne shall loose his glorious light,
And Ignorance (as blacke as darkest night)
Shall spreade her Sable winges about this Ile
And Babylon growe whore ouer worde & stile
Albions white Cliffe: the Israelite muste double
the Bricke they made, yet bee allowd nor Stubble.
And Aegyptian with an Hebrewe shall ~~[illegible]~~ endes
And ye Hebrew wth a Moyses to his freinde./
Ther is an execrable thinge kept hid,
Such a tyme as Modeste dothe forbid
My Pen to Name: till yt bee brought to light
And Acha punisht, looke to bee put to flight;
Before the Mo of Aie, yw shall not stande
Nor shall ought escape yt yw take in hande;
the Lambs fre his wife shall bee diuorst,
And ouy poore Mds virgin shall be forst;
vrias shalbe murdred for his wife,
And Naboth sleepe in Padge of his Life.
yow lusted for a Kingd; Hoards Kinge robbed yw,
And grant yw pdon, as I lord forgiue w.
yow took a Curfott of My happy Raigne,
And payd My well-deserninges with disdayne.
But oh yow cast not Mee away, not I
yw Blighted, twas ye Sp of hope most high
And go yw shall call & Crye in vayne
Boolbeffe yw shall haue, boolbeffe coplayne./
fre forth ye Northerne pplayne i cod at last
the Lyon rouzd fre bound, yt shall lay waste
yow towne & cittyes; who shalbe bpp alas
to stoppe ye gappe, whor such his wrath shall cease
Hee shall by Policye & craft doe more
then All ye worlde by force could doe before.

Yt Knowe

yᵗ knows his Ends, his last Conclusiō
Shalbe but Miserable & Confusiō.
Hearke hearke, Hoards Organs Towers are away,
My Comissiō's ended: I dare not stay:
The bloody Quiristers of Hoard I heare
Sinings their voyces to ou Lordaignes eare:
Farewell (poore Soules) god pray, Repent & saue
The Hoard & vniust judge is wound a laue
By Impunity, much more will yᵗ
That is ouchyld & prone to Cloudeye.
I shall affoord yᵉ prayers ony howre,
And to yᵉ vttmoᵗ will exhort my powre
wᵗh him yᵗ only can: & will rebound yᵒᵘ
Thers hope of pdon yf hee ouer rebound yow.
Grieue for wᵗhat past wᵗh a Resolucōn
to amend yᵉ tyme dessered yᵉ Execucō.
vnto yᵉ horns of yᵉ Altar tymely flye
tymely Repent, Cast yow bitymely Eye.

how all the newes vpō th' exchange is of the gold Lady
the pope at no hand will allow K James shal be her Lady
P C can get no victuals sufficient for his traine
his horses & his trompeters are al come back againe
hey downe derry &c ——
if this be so there's many mo besides vs will be merry
Gondamore whose breech was sore lac'd ride besides the saddle
he hath long time been latching eggs & those may now prove addle
besides false hearted englishmē w^ch^ ioin'd with him for traine
begin to scratch because the match doth doubtful yet remaine
hey
but shal I tell you what I think, there must stil fly some rumor
all fears wil how^ld^ to wink & sound the peoples humor
for questionles al doubts were stand after P C went thither
& now a nay is prepared to faile but 9 hours whither —
hey downe
learners K prosper our K & P discover Lord their fols
with those y^t^ are hispaniolised or would this county lose
& frank y^t^ those w^ch^ matches mak before their parkes woo
may goe fell matches vp & downe as ken poore french folk doe
hey with hey down —


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black

All the newes that's stirring now
Is of the goulden Lady
The Race ayre will not allowe
King James shalbe her Lady
Charles can gett noe victualls yet
Sufficient for his trayne
His horses and his Trompets
Are all come back againe

Gundimor whose Breech was sore
Hee rydes beside the saddle
Hee hath long tyme byn hatching eggs
wch now may proue all addle
And those fallo hearted English
wch with him wrought for Spaine
Begin to scratch, because the match
Both doubtfull yett remayne

Count Buckingham, and Cottington
With their Endymion Swayne
Vsd their Cork tricks wth Catholiqs
To bring o^r Prince into Spaine
But doe is there, wee need not feare
the Lady will not marry
God send o^r Charles safe home againe
And loose his worship tarry

Earle Rutland is o^r Admirall
Lord Windsore heads the Reare
Lord Morley Camott doe with all
Except a wrench wee there
God send them all a merry gale
And dryue them from o^r shoare
And graunt all Papists loue their Prince
As Morley loues his whore

But shall I tell yo^u what I think
I doubt this but a rumor
The ffoxes they know how to wink
To sound the Peoples humor

for questionlesse all doubts were staid
Before o^r Charles went thither
And now a Parly is at hand
To settle the Lord knowes whither

the Lord preserve o^r king and Throne
A plague upon their Feuds
And all y^t are Hispanioliz'd
And would their Country lose
And grant all those y^t wish her woe
Before the Styes hee
May goe toll mattocks up and downe
As now poore Frogs do the doe

Vatum negat, falit indignatio versum.

An Apologetique rime vindicating D.C. Deane of CC from the aspersion of late adulatory verses published under his name

False in his denary. false; nay more the lay
As many sounds as hee ore's strings did play,
Great Phœbus darlings for his dignitie
That no such thought abus'd his brains that hee
Is growne in wit, as well as beard, and shall
Haue left his boyes play: scornes to bee so base
As vow his wits to those forgotten rimes
Whose often births endeard his former times
To tapstrs rapstrees Oathers and yt lowsy crew
Of soueraigne Bacchus wittie Cmates: his muse
This wanton youth and's verses made them merry
And seemd to draw downe white, Canary, Sherry
And he by some was ere deemd borne for naught
But to employ some Ballad-singers throate.
Those times are changd: he's great and he the guise
Of Lord's estates (though madmen) to grow wise.
One Patents power hath changd both mind and blood
And made him at a clapp as great so good.

'Tis blame to thinke him what he was, his coates
And Caffocks worth hath hild his wilder oates
His former layes (beleeu't) he now disdaines
As much as Calvin or the puritanes.
Sure twas some hungry poetastres Grayne
whose hucks stinge termes made famine in all Spaine
And his owne guts: who not what to eate
Or weares but walls: they are all his cloth and meate.
Some Taylor or some Tanner dares to Eye
And clap his name to their fale-poetry.
Or elfe perhaps twas some satyrique quill
That whipt and scourged o' woodstock scene, who shill
Beares malice in his inke: some such did doe it
And coind a drannery to steale weight to it
Beleeu't or this one worse: but neere suppose
Heele yeeld to owne such flatteries as those.
Such an extorcion cannot but vndoe
The seruilst mind to play and flatter too.
Yet probable to thinke that he should longe
Once more to tee the ground of Bygone songs?
Or that he should provoke Court wits to sing
The second part oth' bandstring and the ring
Or lets suppose that he Crutch yet my braine
Cannot admitt) made triall of that vaine
That exist his muse enricht him with: that hee
Once more awake his slumbring faculties
Yet sure he would provide his verse might bee
Fyled and round without some fraudry
The salved volume questionlesse should scape
The volence of a posterique rape.
That name (mother Zeledes) could not
Proceede from one ingroft in Lewies lot.
Such abuse of scripture prose lyne
Give stronger proofe oth Atheist them divine
For breife his calling, place, degrees, disclayme
This stupid act, this injury of fame
For is it likely that rich Corbets spirit
should raise it selfe by Ballads more then merit?

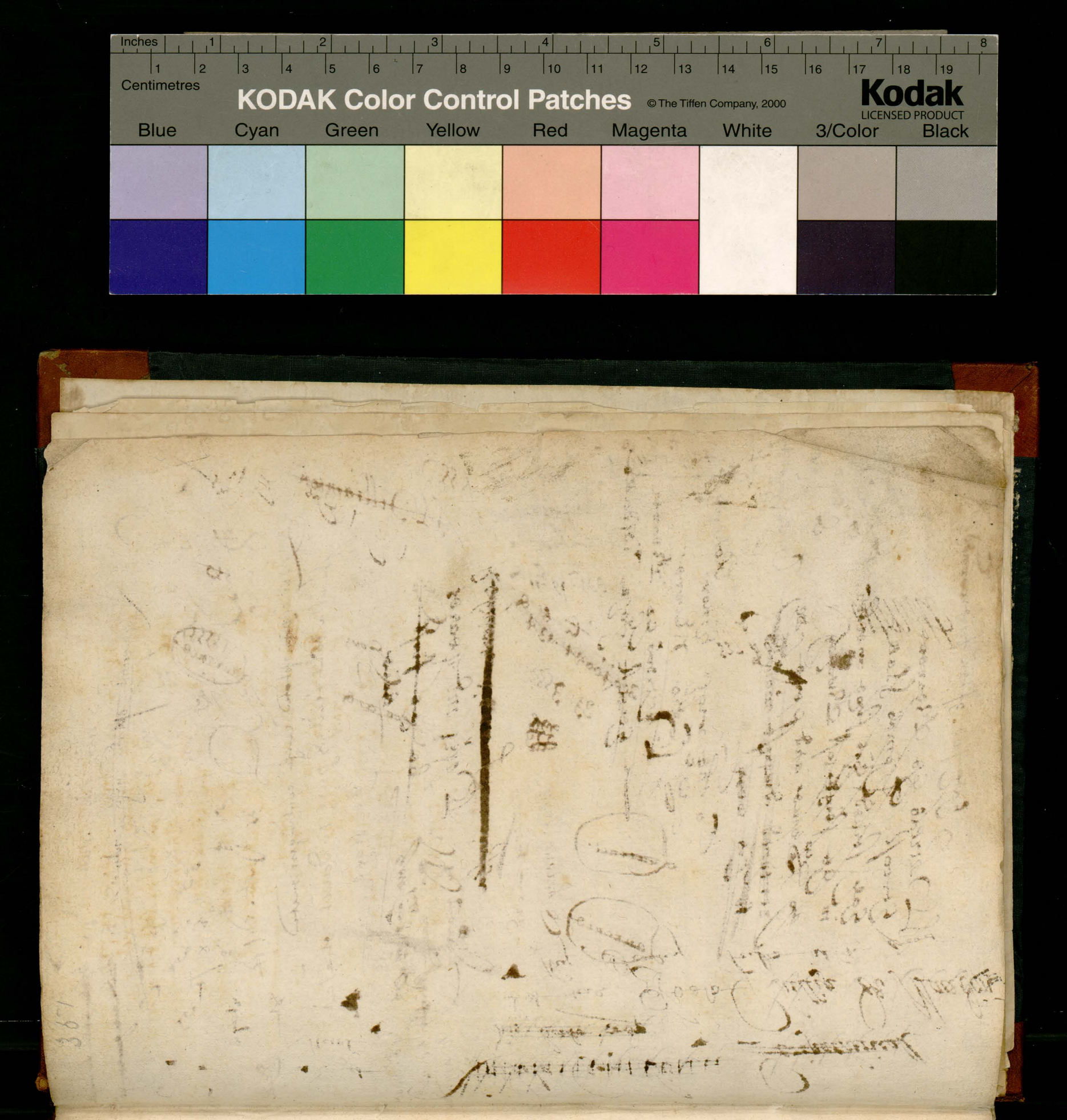
Kodak Color Control Patches © The Tiffen Company, 2000 KODAK LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue Cyan Green Yellow Red Magenta White 3/Color Black
Inches Centimetres

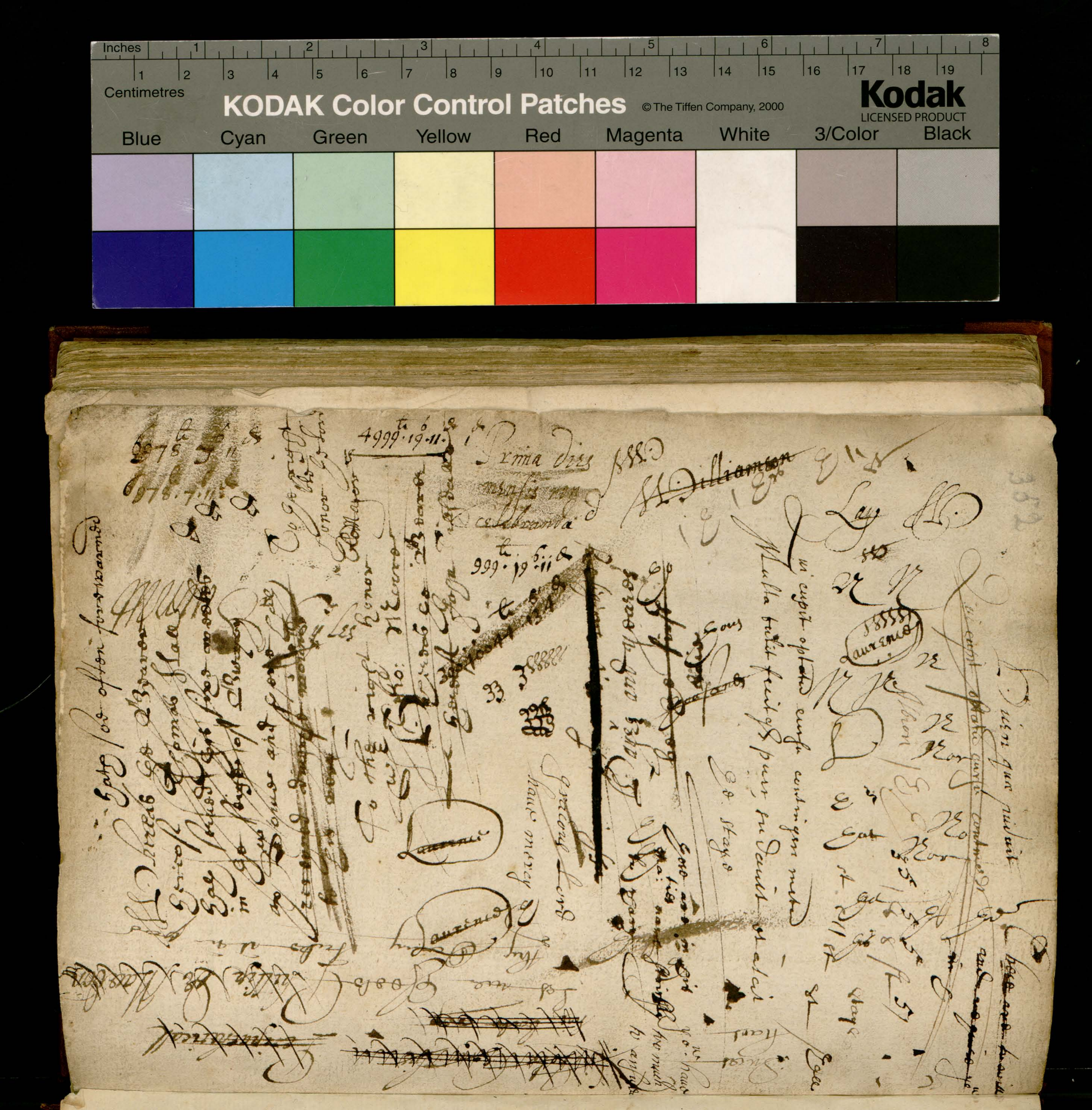
DC verses, or w^th the former were made /

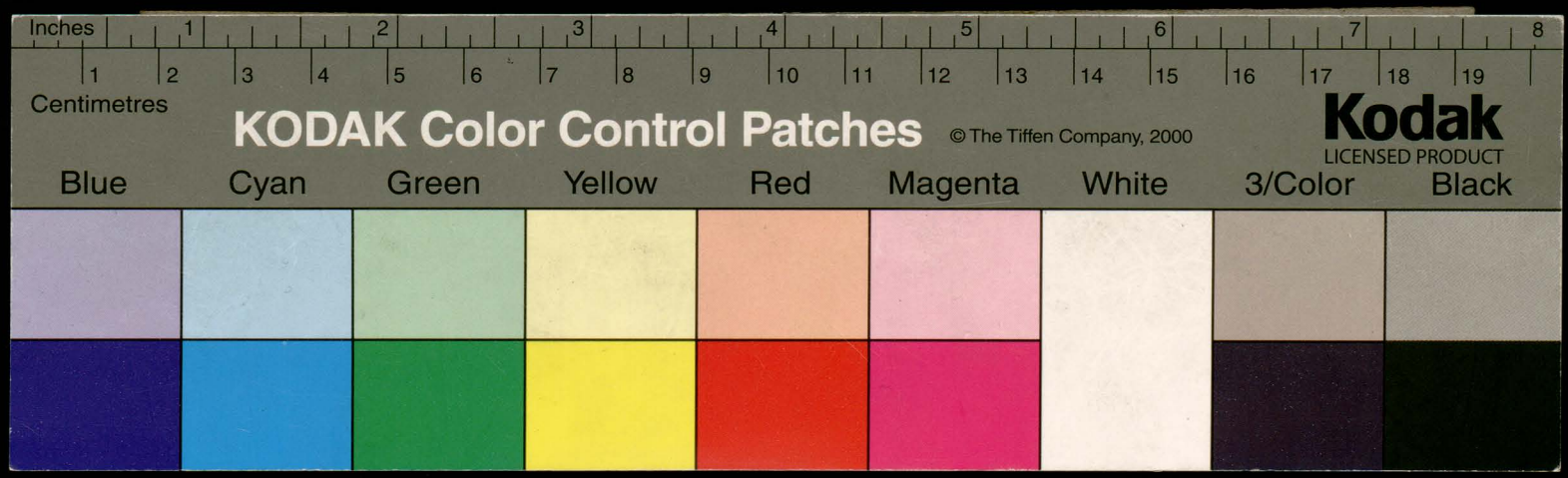
I've read of Islands floting and removd
In ouids-time, but neuer heard it proud
Till now, that fable by the Prince and you
By your transporting England is made true.
Or we are not reserue were neere the dog-star raignes
No coolar in o^r clymat then in Spaines:
The Elfe flame breath, flames are, flame heate and burning
As heare, as there will be till your returning.
Come see the, and be altered, left perhaps
your stay make an error in true Shapes:
Left England will be found, when you shall passe
A thousand miles nearer Southward then it was.
O that you were my Lord, o that you were
Now in black-fryers or had a defended sewer
Or that you were Smith againe 2 houres to beer
In Hawles next Sunday at full sea at three:
Then you should heare the legend of each day
The Genius of your inne day of your way.
your Entertainer, accidents vnfold
how could a Prince at Court, and reach Madrid.
Then should you heare how the state-grandes flout you
with their owne double diligence about you.
How the enuirons Prince walkes with a guard
Of Spanish spyes and his owne seruants Card.
How not a Chaplaine of his owne may stay
when he would heare a seamon preach, or pray.
you would be hungry hauing dind to heare
the price of victuals and the scarcity there.
As if the Prince had venture there his life
to make a famine not to fetch a wife.
your egg Cwth must bee sold too gaze deare
As english Capons, Capons as cheape heere.
No offer for Neese or Cattell, for they say
It is not eat and made, grasse there grows hay.
Then tis so scarce thing for mens paine, they sweare
you neuer heard of the rare oyster there.
your Cold meate comes in a reaching and your wine
Yet all burnt Sack, the fire is in the vine

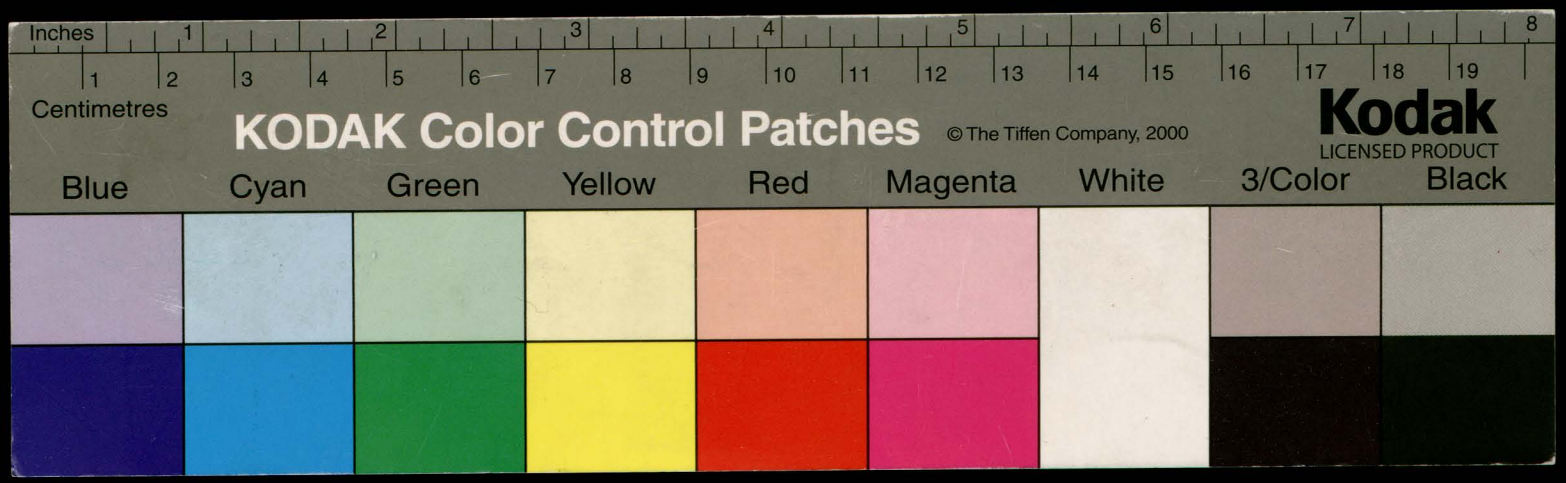
Item your pullets are distinguishtheare
Into 4 quarters as wee calue the yeare
And are a weeke a wasting munday noone
A wing, at supper somet hing with a spoone
Tuesday a Leg and so forth, sunday more
The liuer and the gizards betwixt foure
As for your mutton, in the best house-hold se
Tis felony to cheap en a whole shoulder.
For now our stomacks come to vs againe
when wee conceiue what snatchings ie in Spaine.
I whilst I write and for the newes desperate
Am forct to call for breakfast in and eate.
And doe you wonder at this dearth, the while
The flood that makes it dwindles the milder file
Peeks of Paules, those of Duke Humphreys meale
That feed on naught but greames and emptines.
But harke you Lapwing, in one crosse weeke
My Lord hath lost 4000t at glecke.
And though they doe allow you little meate
They are content your losses should be great.
Talke on my Deanery, falser then your fare
Or then your difference with the Count D'olivares
Wch was reported strongly, for one tyde
But after it lowres flowing ebb and side.
If God would not this great designe should beer
Effect and round with out some trauerse
Nor that a Comick should end his entercriage
With out some flouts or some prodigious byes
If for a good event the heauens doe please
Mine tongues should become rougher then the seas
And if the expence of paper should be such
First written, then stampt out of dutch
Colantors Des Dueles newes more newes
All wch so innocent whitenesse doe abuse
If first the Belgique pfmire must see seasons.
Before the Spanish Lady be a Queene.
With that successe and such an end at last
Ah welcome pleasant, greatfull that is past

And such an end were pray: then shall you see
A type of that wch mother Zebedee
Wisht for her sonnes in heaven, the prince and you
At either hand of James you need not sue
Hee on the right, you on the left, the king
Safe in the midst you both environing.
Then shall I tell my L: his word and hand
And for feit all L. Rosse the Prince cause hand.
Then shall I get the Duke: your royall friend
gaine all his other honours: this you send you earned
This you have wrought, for this you reard out
Like a strong Smith, good workman and a stout
In this I have a part, in this I see
Some new addition smiling upon mee
Who in an humble distance claime my share
In all your greatnes what ever you are.


Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black




Inches
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black


Inches
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
Centimetres
KODAK Color Control Patches
© The Tiffen Company, 2000
Kodak
LICENSED PRODUCT
Blue
Cyan
Green
Yellow
Red
Magenta
White
3/Color
Black